

4-30-1963

# Vasco de Quiroga and His Pueblo-Hospitals of Santa Fe

Fintan Benedict Warren O. F. M.

Follow this and additional works at: [https://digitalrepository.unm.edu/hist\\_etds](https://digitalrepository.unm.edu/hist_etds)



Part of the [History Commons](#)

---

## Recommended Citation

Warren, Fintan Benedict O. F. M.. "Vasco de Quiroga and His Pueblo-Hospitals of Santa Fe." (1963).  
[https://digitalrepository.unm.edu/hist\\_etds/252](https://digitalrepository.unm.edu/hist_etds/252)

This Thesis is brought to you for free and open access by the Electronic Theses and Dissertations at UNM Digital Repository. It has been accepted for inclusion in History ETDs by an authorized administrator of UNM Digital Repository. For more information, please contact [disc@unm.edu](mailto:disc@unm.edu).

UNIVERSITY OF NEW MEXICO



A14410 479262



VASCO DE  
OLIVEIRA

LIBRARY

NEWARK

575.789

130wa

1963

cop. 2

THE LIBRARY  
UNIVERSITY OF NEW MEXICO



Call No.

378.789  
Un3l0wa  
1963  
cop.2

Accession  
Number

308396



A14410 479262

# IMPORTANT!

Special care should be taken to prevent loss or damage of this volume. If lost or damaged, it must be paid for at the current rate of typing.

DATE DUE	
NOV 7 1963	REC'D UNM DEC 14 '75
FEB 17 1964	JUL 14 '76 UNM 2w
JUN 15 1964	REC'D UNM
MAY 28 1964	OCT 26 '76 UNM 2w
AUG 1 1966	REC'D UNM JAN 7 '77
AUG 24 1966	REC'D UNM AUG 2 '78
MAY 9 1967	REC'D UNM AUG 2 '78
MAY 8 1967	REC'D UNM AUG 2 '78
OCT 26 '73	UNM 2w
OCT 15 '73	
OCT 28 '75	UNM 2w

GAYLORD

PRINTED IN U.S.A.





# UNIVERSITY OF NEW MEXICO LIBRARY

## MANUSCRIPT THESES

Unpublished theses submitted for the Master's and Doctor's degrees and deposited in the University of New Mexico Library are open for inspection, but are to be used only with due regard to the rights of the authors. Bibliographical references may be noted, but passages may be copied only with the permission of the authors, and proper credit must be given in subsequent written or published work. Extensive copying or publication of the thesis in whole or in part requires also the consent of the Dean of the Graduate School of the University of New Mexico.

This thesis by Reverend Fintan Warren, O.F.M.  
has been used by the following persons, whose signatures attest their acceptance of the above restrictions.

A Library which borrows this thesis for use by its patrons is expected to secure the signature of each user.

NAME AND ADDRESS

DATE

MILLERS FALLS

PLEASE

RETURN TO CONTENTS







VASCO DE QUIROGA  
AND HIS  
PUEBLO-HOSPITALS OF SANTA FE

By the  
Reverend Fintan Warren, O. F. M.

A Dissertation  
Submitted in Partial Fulfillment of the  
Requirements for the Degree of  
Doctor of Philosophy in History

The University of New Mexico

1963







Copyright by  
(Rev.) Fintan Benedict Warren  
1963





This dissertation, directed and approved by the candidate's committee, has been accepted by the Graduate Committee of The University of New Mexico in partial fulfillment of the requirements for the degree of

DOCTOR OF PHILOSOPHY

W. J. Sams  
DEAN

April 30, 1963  
DATE

VASCO DE QUIROGA AND HIS PUEBLO-HOSPITALS OF SANTA FE

by the Reverend Fintan Warren, O. F. M.

Committee

Francis V. Scholer  
CHAIRMAN

Edwin L. Lennen

Stanley Newman







378.789  
Un 310wa  
1963  
Cop. 2

#### ACKNOWLEDGMENTS

I wish to acknowledge my indebtedness to Professor France V. Scholes for his untiring direction and criticism of this work, to the staffs of the various archives in which the materials were found, and to the Franciscan Fathers of the Academy of American Franciscan History whose moral and financial backing made this research possible.







## TABLE OF CONTENTS

	Page
LIST OF ABBREVIATIONS . . . . .	iv
Chapter	
I. INTRODUCTION . . . . .	1
II. QUIROGA IN SPAIN . . . . .	8
III. THE IDEA OF THE PUEBLOS DE SANTA FE . . . . .	37
IV. THE FOUNDING OF SANTA FE DE MÉXICO . . . . .	66
V. DIFFICULTIES OF SANTA FE DE MÉXICO . . . . .	86
VI. MICHOACÁN AND THE FOUNDING OF SANTA FE DE LA LAGUNA. . . .	113
VII. DEVELOPMENT AND OPPOSITION IN SANTA FE DE LA LAGUNA. . . .	131
VIII. QUIROGA'S TESTAMENT AND ITS AFTEREFFECTS . . . . .	164
IX. CONCLUSIONS . . . . .	180
BIBLIOGRAPHY . . . . .	190







# LIST OF ABBREVIATIONS

- AC Actas de cabildo de la ciudad de México. 50 vols. México, 1889-1916.
- AGI Archivo General de Indias. Sevilla.
- AGS Archivo General de Simancas. Simancas.
- Aguayo Spencer Aguayo Spencer, Rafael (ed.), Don Vasco de Quiroga: documentos. México, 1939.
- AHN Archivo Histórico Nacional. Madrid.
- Cabrera Burrus, Ernest J. (trans. and ed.). "Cristóbal Cabrera on the Missionary Methods of Vasco de Quiroga," Manuscripta, V (1961), 17-27.
- DII Colección de documentos inéditos relativos al descubrimiento, conquista, y organización de las antiguas posesiones españolas de América y Oceanía. 42 vols. Madrid, 1864-1884.
- ENE Paso y Troncoso, Francisco del (ed.). Epistolario de Nueva España. 16 vols. México, 1939-1942.
- León, Documentos León, Nicolás, y José Miguel Quintana (eds.). Documentos inéditos referentes al Ilustrísimo Señor Don Vasco de Quiroga. México, 1940.
- León, Quiroga León, Nicolás. El Ylmo. Señor Don Vasco de Quiroga, primer obispo de Michoacán. México, 1903.
- More, Utopia (English) More, Thomas. Utopia, trans. Raphe Robynson, ed. J. Rawson Lumby. Cambridge, England, 1940.
- More, Utopia (Latin) More, Thomas. De Optimo Reip. Statu deque Nova Insula Utopia. Basilea, 1518.
- Moreno Moreno, Juan José. "Fragmentos de la vida y virtudes del V. Ilmo. Sr. Dr. D. Vasco de Quiroga," in Aguayo Spencer, pp. 1-187.
- Puga Puga, Vasco de (comp.). Provisiones, cédulas, instrucciones de su Majestad. 2 vols. México, 1878.







- Quiroga, "Información en derecho" "Información en derecho del Lic. Quiroga sobre algunas provisiones del Real Consejo de Indias," in Aguayo Spencer, pp. 291-406.
- Quiroga, "Ordenanzas" Quiroga, Vasco de. "Reglas y ordenanzas para el gobierno de los hospitales de Santa Fe de México y Michoacán," in Aguayo Spencer, pp. 249-265.
- Quiroga, "Testamento" "Testamento del Ilmo. Sr. D. Vasco de Quiroga," in Aguayo Spencer, pp. 271-287, as compared with MS copy in AGI, Justicia, leg. 208, no. 4.
- Quiroga vs. Infante, 1539 Juan Infante, vecino de México, con D. Vasco de Quiroga, obispo de Michoacán, y D. Pedro Panza, indio gobernador de la dicha provincia, sobre que a estos se les multase por haberle impedido la posesión de unos pueblos que tenía en encomienda, 1539. AGI, Justicia, leg. 129, no. 3.
- Quiroga vs. Infante, 1540 Autos del obispo y la ciudad de Michoacán con Juan Infante, vecino de México sobre que a este le restituyeran los pueblos de Comanja y Naranja con los estancias a ellos sujetos que le habían sido encomendados, 1540. AGI, Justicia, leg. 130.
- Quiroga vs. Martín Cortés D. Vasco de Quiroga, obispo de Michoacán, con D. Martín Cortés, Marqués del Valle, sobre la jurisdicción del pueblo de Santa Fe de México, 1563. AGI, Escribanía de Cámara, leg. 159A, segunda pieza.
- Quiroga vs. Ruiz Gonzalo Ruiz, vecino y regidor de México, y el fiscal con el obispo de Michoacán, D. Vasco de Quiroga, sobre que tributasen los indios del pueblo nuevo de Santa Fe, distante una legua de México, 1557. AGI, Justicia, leg. 204, no. 3, ramo 3.
- RSA Residencia que se tomó a los Licenciados Juan Salmerón, Alonso Maldonado, Francisco Ceynos, y Vasco de Quiroga, presidente y oidores que fueron de la Audiencia de México del tiempo que sirvieron sus oficios; por el Licenciado Francisco de Loaysa, oidor de aquella audiencia, 1535-1536. AGI, Justicia, leg. 232.







## CHAPTER I

### INTRODUCTION

Vasco de Quiroga, one of the truly great figures sent from Spain to New Spain in the sixteenth century, stands out for his contributions to the political, ecclesiastical, and social development of Mexico. He was sent to the New World by the Spanish crown as a member of the Second Audiencia of Mexico in an effort to straighten out the confusion and turmoil which had resulted from ten years of struggling factionalism in the young colony and from the disastrous regime of Nuño de Guzmán and his companions of the First Audiencia. The Aztec empire had been finally and definitively subjugated to Spanish rule by Hernando Cortés in August of 1521. Hardly had the conquest been completed when dissatisfaction aroused murmuring and dissention among the Conqueror's followers. Cortés managed to keep matters in hand for a few years by sending his captains and soldiers on various expeditions. But when one of these expeditions seemed to be turning against Cortés and he marched off to Honduras in 1524, his enemies gained the upper hand in Mexico. They soon despoiled many of Cortés' followers of their encomiendas and possessions, distributing them among others who had not been so bountifully rewarded. Even Cortés himself suffered serious losses in this change of power. When he returned to Mexico in 1526 he attempted to restore conditions as they had been previous to his departure, but soon







his powers as governor were taken from him, passing in quick succession from Luis Ponce de León to Marcos de Aguilar to Alonso de Estrada. Each played to one side or the other of the factions in the colony.

In December 1527 a new direction was given to the government of Mexico with the appointment of an audiencia, consisting of a presidente and four oidores, to direct the affairs of the colony. Nuño de Guzmán, who had previously been governor of Pánuco, in present-day northeastern Mexico, was appointed to the office of presidente. Only two of the oidores, Juan Ortiz de Matienzo and Diego Delgadillo, were able to fill their offices. These officials, who assumed authority at the end of 1528, had soon turned the political order of Mexico topsy-turvy by taking every means to feather their own nests and by rewarding their own followers by grants and privileges taken from the friends of Cortés. Complaints came thick and fast to King and Council in Spain, and in late 1529 the crown began putting out feelers for members of a new audiencia to replace entirely the one which was showing such bad results in Mexico. Among those who were contacted and who accepted the appointment was the Licenciado Vasco de Quiroga, a man in his middle or late fifties, who had already served his government in several positions of trust.

Little did the licenciado, an unordained layman, realize that in accepting this position he would be opening the way to his appointment as the first bishop of the diocese of Michoacán in western Mexico, an office which would give him a position of influence in Mexican ecclesiastical affairs for nearly thirty years. As oidor he would also establish the pueblo-hospitals of Santa Fe near the cities of México and Michoacán







(Tzintzuntzan), a work of social beneficence for which his name is still remembered among the enemies of his Church as well as among its friends.

It is with these pueblo-hospitals of Santa Fe that this paper will treat. The study of these hospitals has been attempted several times previously but it was done on the basis of incomplete printed sources or only from an organizational point of view. Thus, most modern writers, such as Paul L. Callens, S. J., in his Tata Vasco, a Great Reformer of the 16th Century, Benjamín Jarnés in his Don Vasco de Quiroga, obispo de Utopia, M. M. Lacas and Paul Lietz in their various articles, and Nicolás León in El Ylmo. Señor Don Vasco de Quiroga, primer obispo de Michoacán, have reviewed the work of Quiroga, with greater or lesser thoroughness, on the basis of previously published documentation with some small amount of new material.<sup>1</sup> On the other hand, Silvio Zavala has concentrated on the origin of the idea of the pueblos and their ordinances, developing especially his discovery of the influence of Thomas More on the formulation of the ordinances. He has presented his findings in three works: La Utopia de Tomás Moro en la Nueva España y otros estudios; Ideario de Vasco de Quiroga; and Sir Thomas More in New Spain. The first of these essays evoked a rather impassioned reply entitled Santo Tomás More y "La Utopia de Tomás Moro en La Nueva España," by Justino Fernández and Edmundo O'Gorman. The Zavala thesis, however, has stood up well under further study and criticism.

---

<sup>1</sup>Since the following paragraphs constitute merely a short bibliographical summary, complete citations are not given. For complete citations the reader is referred to the bibliography at the end of the work.







The documentary publications for Quiroga, although they appear to be quite extensive, are actually more extensive in their duplication than in their originality, and are in general rather poorly done. The standard documentary collections, Colección de documentos inéditos de Indias, Cedulario de Puga, and Epistolario de Nueva España, need only be mentioned. León made a major contribution in his life of Quiroga by publishing the bishop's will (although a very faulty copy) together with several items of correspondence to and from Quiroga. In 1940 appeared two volumes of documents on Quiroga, both marred seriously by faulty method.<sup>2</sup> José Miguel Quintana published Documentos inéditos referentes al ilustrísimo Señor Don Vasco de Quiroga, existentes en el Archivo General de Indias, recopilados por Nicolás León. As the editor indicates in his preface, the published documents had passed through several manuscript copies. When compared with the originals they are found to be replete with copyists' errors. Rafael Aguayo Spencer, in Don Vasco de Quiroga: documentos, for the main part republished documents from older printed sources, retaining all the errors of the first printings. This is true both of the "Información en derecho" and of the "Testamento." In the former, republished from the Colección de documentos inéditos de Indias, X, 333-525, several important marginal notations are missing, as are also two pages of the original text, which is to be found in the Biblioteca Nacional in Madrid. The testament is reprinted from León's life of Quiroga, and contains several copyist's errors, major or minor,

---

<sup>2</sup>For a criticism of these two works, see Sergio Méndez Arceo, "Dos libros sobre Don Vasco de Quiroga," Abside, IV, no. 11 (November, 1940), 62-64.







on every page. Each of these documentary volumes prints a group of questions and testimony from Quiroga's residencia of 1536, but both depend ultimately upon an incomplete selection of the questions of the descargos, a selection made by Quiroga to defend his rights over the pueblos de Santa Fe in 1554.

The intent of the present essay is to study the history of these pueblo-hospitals, principally from a narrative point of view, although this will necessarily entail some probing into the ideological background of these experiments in Christian philanthropy. In making this study, the main dependence will be upon documentation collected in various archives of Spain during 1961. But one cannot neglect the older secondary sources, such as Juan José Moreno's Fragmentos de la vida y virtudes del V. Ilmo. y Rmo. Sr. Dr. D. Vasco de Quiroga (1766), the most complete life of Quiroga yet written, as well as the various religious chronicles of the area. Moreno in particular had access to many documents in Michoacán which are now lost to us.

The documentation collected in Spain has certain shortcomings. For the main part it consists of the official copies of several lawsuits in which Quiroga became involved in the defense of his pueblos. Although Quiroga submitted many documents of primary importance as evidence in these lawsuits, they do not give us the personal insights into the inner workings of the pueblos that we would like to have. Personal correspondence from Quiroga to the Council of the Indies was found to be singularly scarce, considering his importance for the period and the length of time during which he was active. Only three or four personal letters were found,







none of which shed any light on the actual operations of the pueblo-hospitals. The lawsuits, then, must be our principal source. In spite of their obvious shortcomings for showing the inner spirit of the hospitals, they have preserved for us a surprising amount of factual historical material regarding Quiroga's enterprises.

The breakdown of the material into chapters will be as follows. Chapter II will consider Quiroga's Spanish background up to the time of his appointment as oidor of New Spain. Chapter III will study the concept of the hospitals--the various influences which shaped the concept, the development of the concept in Quiroga's mind, and the expression of the concept in the ordinances of the pueblos. The realization of the concept in the founding of the pueblo-hospital of Santa Fe near Mexico City will be the subject matter for Chapter IV. In Chapter V we will consider the opposition which beset the pueblo from its very beginning up to the end of Quiroga's life in 1565. In Chapter VI we will turn our attention to Michoacán, briefly tracing the course of its history from the time of the conquest through the period of Quiroga's visitation there in 1533-1534 and including the establishment of the second pueblo de Santa Fe near Lake Pátzcuaro. The development of this pueblo during Quiroga's lifetime, also in the face of considerable opposition, will constitute the subject of Chapter VII. Chapter VIII will conclude the body of the work, with a consideration of Quiroga's will, his death, and its aftermath in relation to the pueblos de Santa Fe. In Chapter IX, we will draw certain conclusions from the previous chapters.

Before entering into the body of the paper, we would like to make some clarifying remarks in regard to the term "hospital" when used



none of which need any light on the special operations of the public-  
hospitals. The hospitals, then, must be our principal concern. In spite  
of their obvious shortcomings for showing the inner spirit of the  
hospitals, they have preserved for us a valuable amount of factual  
historical material regarding Gaitano's enterprise.

The presentation of the material in the chapters will be as follows.  
Chapter II will consider Gaitano's Spanish background up to the time of  
his appointment as mayor of New Spain. Chapter III will study the con-  
cept of the hospitals--the various influences which shaped the concept,  
the development of the concept in Gaitano's mind, and the expression of  
the concept in the ordinances of the hospitals. The realization of the  
concept in the founding of the public-hospital of Santa Fe near Mexico  
City will be the subject matter for Chapter IV. In Chapter V we will  
consider the opposition which beset the public from its very beginning  
up to the end of Gaitano's life in 1565. In Chapter VI we will turn  
our attention to Michoacán, briefly tracing the course of its history  
from the time of the conquest through the period of Gaitano's visitation  
there in 1555-1556 and including the establishment of the second public  
de Santa Fe near Lake Patzcuaro. The development of this public during  
Gaitano's lifetime, also in the face of considerable opposition, will  
constitute the subject of Chapter VII. Chapter VIII will conclude the  
body of the work, with a consideration of Gaitano's will, his death, and  
its aftermath in relation to the public de Santa Fe. In Chapter IX,  
we will draw certain conclusions from the previous chapters.

Before entering into the body of the paper, we would like to  
make some clarifying remarks in regard to the term "hospitals" when used



in reference to the pueblos de Santa Fe. Hospital, in modern English usage, has taken on almost exclusively the sense of a place set aside for the medical care of the sick and injured. We forget the close relationship in derivation between hospital and hospitality. But there is an older meaning for hospital in English which is considerably broader in significance. Hospital in this sense is defined as "a charitable institution for the refuge, maintenance, or education of needy, aged, infirm, or young persons."<sup>3</sup> This definition is descriptive of many, if not most of the hospital foundations in the Middle Ages and early modern times in both Europe and Spanish America. It is in this sense that Quiroga applied the word to the pueblos that he founded. They were to be what we might call asylums, refuges, or "homes," caring not only for the sick but also for orphans, widows, and all types of unfortunates. Quiroga considered that lack of knowledge of the Christian faith and of civilized practices were among the most serious misfortunes suffered by the Indians. For this reason instruction and training always held a high place among the works of Quiroga's pueblo-hospitals and, indeed, motivated the name he gave to them, pueblos de Santa Fe. These pueblo-hospitals may be described as communities organized for the achievement of social, philanthropic, and religious ends.

---

<sup>3</sup>Webster's Collegiate Dictionary (5th ed., Springfield, Mass., 1948), p. 481.



in reference to the public as *Hospitals*, in modern English usage, has taken on almost exclusively the sense of a place set aside for the medical care of the sick and injured. To forget the close relationship in derivation between *hospital* and *hospitality*. But there is an older meaning for *hospital* in English which is considerably broader in significance. *Hospital* in this sense is defined as "a charitable institution for the relief, maintenance, or education of needy, aged, infirm, or young persons." This definition is descriptive of many, if not most of the hospitals founded in the Middle Ages and early modern times in both Europe and American America. It is in this sense that Quignon applied the word to the question that he founded. They were to be what we might call asylums, refuges, or "houses," caring not only for the sick but also for orphans, widows, and all types of unfortunate. Quignon considered that lack of knowledge of the Christian faith and of civilized practices were among the most serious misfortunes suffered by the Indians. For this reason instruction and training always held a high place among the work of Quignon's public-hospitals and, indeed, motivated the name he gave to them, *Quignon de Saint-Joseph*. These public-hospitals may be described as communities organized for the achievement of social, philanthropic, and religious ends.



## CHAPTER II

### QUIROGA IN SPAIN

Who was Vasco de Quiroga and what were his origins? He was born in a small but distinguished town on the plain of Castilla la Vieja, a town with the imposing name of Madrigal de las Altas Torres.<sup>1</sup> The date of his birth is unknown. The year 1470 has usually been assigned for his birth because of the generally accepted tradition that he was ninety-five when he died in the year 1565.<sup>2</sup> There is, however, considerable reason for fixing a later date for his birth. An apostolic brief, "Exponi nobis," of Paul III, dated May 12, 1549, indicates that after Quiroga received his appointment as bishop he appealed for a dispensation from the triennial episcopal obligation of visiting Rome on the ground that he was in his sixtieth year.<sup>3</sup> But the bulls of Quiroga's appointment could hardly have arrived in Mexico before the summer of 1537, since the cost for dispatching them was paid only on March 2 of that year.<sup>4</sup> If, then, Quiroga was in his sixtieth year (i.e., fifty-nine

---

<sup>1</sup>Quiroga, "Testamento," p. 277; Moreno, p. 19.

<sup>2</sup>Aguayo Spencer, p. 191, n. 3.

<sup>3</sup>Sergio Méndez Arceo, "Contribución a la historia de Don Vasco de Quiroga," Abside, V (1941), 206. There is a possibility that Quiroga intended to signify merely that he was over sixty years old, but the wording of the brief, "ac in sexagesimo tuae aetatis anno constitutum existis," indicates rather an exact statement of age.

<sup>4</sup>Ibid., p. 199.



## GUTIERREZ IN SPAIN

who was Vasco de Quiroga and what were his origins? He was born in a small but distinguished town on the plain of Castile in Vieja, a town with the imposing name of Mariscal de las Alas Torres.<sup>1</sup> The date of his birth is unknown. The year 1490 has usually been assigned for his birth because of the generally accepted tradition that he was ninety-five when he died in the year 1585.<sup>2</sup> There is, however, considerable reason for fixing a later date for his birth. An apostolic brief, "Exponit nobis," of Paul III, dated May 12, 1547, indicates that after Quiroga received his appointment as bishop he appeared for a dispensation from the triennial episcopal obligation of visiting Rome on the ground that he was in his sixtieth year.<sup>3</sup> But the bulls of Quiroga's appointment could hardly have arrived in Mexico before the summer of 1557, since the cost for dispatching them was paid only on March 3 of that year.<sup>4</sup> If, then, Quiroga was in his sixtieth year (i.e., fifty-nine

<sup>1</sup> Quiroga, "Testamento," p. 277; Moreno, p. 19.

<sup>2</sup> Aguayo Spencer, p. 191, n. 3.

<sup>3</sup> Sergio Méndez Arce, "Contribución a la historia de Don Vasco de Quiroga," *Abasco*, V (1941), 302. There is a possibility that Quiroga intended to signify merely that he was over sixty years old, but the wording of the brief, "so in consequence that certain laws constituting exaltis," indicates rather an exact statement of age.

<sup>4</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 199.



years old) in 1537, we would have to place the year of his birth at least as late as 1477, and possibly 1478. Research in the parish archives of Madrigal failed to shed any light on this problem. Baptismal records there begin only in 1535.

The family of Quiroga was not native to Old Castile but was of Galician origin. The ancient castle of Quiroga, where the family originated, is in the valley of the same name in the province of Lugo. There is a tradition that the Quirogas were in Galicia before the coming of the Saracens and that a valiant knight of the family defended the valley of Quiroga against the Saracen advance in 715 A. D. with iron-tipped estacas (pikes, stakes?). On this feat was based the family coat of arms--five estacas on a field of green--which Bishop Quiroga used for his small seal.<sup>5</sup> The first definitely documented appearance of the family occurred during the reign of Fernando III el Santo, when a Don Vasco de Quiroga was listed among the ricohombres as lord of the castle in the valley of Quiroga.<sup>6</sup>

Bishop Vasco de Quiroga came by his surname rather indirectly through a female line. His lineage is somewhat difficult to trace, although by combining several sources we can gain a fairly complete picture. Fray Felipe de la Gándara, seventeenth-century Galician genealogist, tells us that Bishop Vasco de Quiroga of Micoacán and Cardinal Gaspar de Quiroga of Toledo were grandson and great-grandson respectively of

---

<sup>5</sup>AGI, México, leg. 281.

<sup>6</sup>Arturo y Alberto García Carraffa, Diccionario heráldico y genealógico de apellidos españoles y americanos, LXXIV (Madrid, 1955), 78.







Don Gonzalo Rodríguez de Valcárcel and Emilia Vázquez de Quiroga.<sup>7</sup>

Francisca de Quiroga Fajardo, a descendant of the family at the time of Philip IV, wrote that Vasco de Quiroga was in fact the uncle of Gaspar de Quiroga.<sup>8</sup> This bit of information clarifies the problem considerably, since there is a manuscript genealogy of Cardinal Quiroga in the Biblioteca Nacional in Madrid.<sup>9</sup> Although this genealogy is written in rather obscure verse, a person can with effort derive a lineage from it. It tells us that Cardinal Quiroga's father, who would be Bishop Vasco de Quiroga's brother, was named Álvaro de Quiroga. Their father also bore the name Vasco de Quiroga, although it seems that in his youth he was known as Gómez Vázquez. This elder Vasco de Quiroga had two brothers, Don Álvaro de Quiroga and Rodrigo Hernández de Quiroga. Don, or Frey, Álvaro de Quiroga was a professed member of the military order of San Juan de Jerusalén. His name also appears in the records of this order in 1475 as comendador of Incio and of the Casa de San Lorenzo, in 1490 as comendador of Incio and Puertomarín, and in 1498 as comendador of Incio, Puertomarín, Quiroga, and Osoño.<sup>10</sup> The elder Vasco seems to have been the first of the family to come to live in Madrigal. The versified

---

<sup>7</sup> Felipe de la Gándara, Nobiliario, armas y triunfos de Galicia, hechos heroicos de sus hijos, y elogios de su nobleza y de la mayor de España y Europa (Madrid, 1677), p. 284.

<sup>8</sup> Francisca de Quiroga Fajardo, Memorial genealógico del claro vetustísimo origen del apellido de Quiroga y su descendencia solariega ilustre (no place or date given), f. 8v.

<sup>9</sup> Robleda, "Genealogía del Cardenal Quiroga," Biblioteca Nacional, Madrid, MS. 3451.

<sup>10</sup> AHN, Sección Histórica, Orden de San Juan de Jerusalén, Lengua de Castilla, Encomiendas: Quiroga, 1256-1714.



Don Gonzalo Rodríguez de Velasco and María Velasco de Velasco.  
 Francisco de Velasco Velasco, a descendant of the family at the time of  
 Philip IV, wrote that Vasco de Velasco was in fact the uncle of Gonzalo.  
 Velasco.<sup>8</sup> This bit of information clarifies the problem considerably,  
 since there is a manuscript genealogy of Cardinal Velasco in the Biblio-  
 teca Nacional in Madrid.<sup>9</sup> Although this genealogy is written in rather  
 obscure verse, a person can with effort derive a lineage from it. It  
 tells us that Cardinal Velasco's father, who would be Diego Velasco de  
 Velasco's brother, was named Álvaro de Velasco. Their father also bore  
 the name Vasco de Velasco, although it seems that in his youth he was  
 known as Gómez Velasco. This older Vasco de Velasco had two brothers,  
 Don Álvaro de Velasco and Rodrigo Hernández de Velasco. Don, or 1590,  
 Álvaro de Velasco was a professed member of the military order of San  
 Juan de Jerusalén. His name also appears in the records of this order  
 in 1475 as comendador of Lario and of the Casa de San Lorenzo, in 1490 as  
comendador of Lario and Puerto Real, and in 1498 as comendador of Lario,  
 Puerto Real, Velasco, and Gómez.<sup>10</sup> The older Vasco seems to have been  
 the first of the family to come to live in Madrid. The verified

<sup>7</sup> Felipe de la Ceballos, Memorias de Velasco, tomo I, tomo de Velasco.  
Memorias de Velasco de sus hijos, y de los de su mujer y de la casa de  
Velasco y Velasco (Madrid, 1877), p. 184.

<sup>8</sup> Francisco de Velasco Velasco, Memorias de Velasco, tomo I, tomo de Velasco.  
Memorias de Velasco de sus hijos, y de los de su mujer y de la casa de  
Velasco y Velasco (Madrid, 1877), p. 184.

<sup>9</sup> Biblioteca del General Velasco, "Biblioteca Nacional,  
 Madrid, Ms. 3451.

<sup>10</sup> ARV, Sección Histórica, Orden de San Juan de Jerusalén, tomo  
 de Castilla, tomos 1756-1774.



genealogy reveals that he was brought to Madrigal by his uncle Gonzalo de Quiroga, Grand Prior of the Order of San Juan, and was married to a woman of an illustrious family. Her name is not given.<sup>11</sup>

The parents of the elder Vasco were Pero Vázquez de la Sumoza and Constancia García de Quiroga. Constancia García had two brothers of importance, García Rodríguez de Quiroga and Frey Gonzalo de Quiroga. The fortunes of the family seem to have benefited a great deal from the fact that Frey Gonzalo became Grand Prior of the Order of San Juan. Not only did Frey Álvaro become an important encomendero and Vasco make a good marriage, but two other nephews were brought into Castile and married to noble women, one to Doña Francisca Treviño de Loaisa and the other to Doña Leonor de Perea.<sup>12</sup>

Constancia García de Quiroga was the daughter of Gonzalo Rodríguez de Valcárcel Balboa y Santalla and Emilia Vázquez de Quiroga. Gándara indicates that Vasco Núñez de Balboa was a grandson of Gonzalo Rodríguez.<sup>13</sup>

<sup>11</sup>The coming of the elder Vasco to Madrigal is told in the following verse by Robleda:

El nombre mas propio del otro [hijo] Vasco era  
al qual el prier de San Juan venerava  
y mas que a los otros sobrinos amava  
y así de sí nunca xamás lo partiera  
asta que Real casamiento le diera  
con una señora dentro en Madrigal  
generosa, ylustre, no su desigual  
y por sobre nombre Quiroga pusiera.

<sup>12</sup>Origen de los Decas y Quirogas de Ciudad Real según la relación del Señor Luis Correa, alcalde de la hermandad vieja de la dicha ciudad, y otros caballeros de ella, contained in Probanza de hidalguía de Antonio Gonzales de Espinosa, 1636, Archivo de la Chancillería Real (Granada), Hidalguía, leg. 183, pieza 329.

<sup>13</sup>Gándara, Nobiliario, p. 529.



11  
González reveals that he was brought to Madrid by his uncle Gonzalo de  
Gutierrez, Grand Prior of the Order of San Juan, and was married to a woman  
of an illustrious family. Her name is not given.

The parents of the elder Vaseo were Pedro Vázquez de la Hazaña  
and Constanza García de Gutierrez. Constanza García had two brothers  
of importance, García Rodríguez de Gutierrez and Frey Gonzalo de Gutierrez.  
The fortunes of the family seem to have diminished a great deal from the  
fact that Frey Gonzalo became Grand Prior of the Order of San Juan.  
Not only did Frey Álvaro become an important emancipator and Vasco make  
a good marriage, but two other nephews were brought into Castile and  
married to noble women, one to Doña Francisca Fernández de losa and the  
other to Doña Leonor de Pared.

12  
Constanza García de Gutierrez was the daughter of Gonzalo Rodríguez  
de Velasco, Balboa y Santalla and Emilia Vázquez de Gutierrez. González  
indicates that Vasco Núñez de Balboa was a grandson of Gonzalo Rodríguez.

11  
The coming of the elder Vaseo to Madrid is told in the  
following verse by Holoeb:

El nombre mas propio del otro [hijo] Vasco era  
al qual el prior de San Juan venia  
y mas que a los otros sobrinos suya  
y así de al maso suya lo pariera  
esta que Real sacando la diere  
con una señora dentro en Madrid  
generosa, yiviera, no en desigual  
y por sobre nombre Gutierrez pariera.

12  
Origen de las Peces y Gutierrez de Ciudad Real según la  
relación del Señor Luis Cortes, alcaide de la hermandad vieja de la  
dicha ciudad, y otros capitales de ella, contada en forma de  
hidalgos de Antonio González de Espinosa, 1576, Archivo de la Chancillería  
Real (Granada), Holográfica, leg. 187, pieza 329.

13  
González, Holográfica, p. 329.



which would make him a first cousin of Bishop Quiroga's father, but there is no statement to support this in any of the other sources. For some clarification of this genealogical maze, see the accompanying table.

Of young Vasco de Quiroga's education we know next to nothing. It is said that he studied jurisprudence in Valladolid,<sup>14</sup> but records of matriculation at the university there do not exist for the time of Quiroga's youth. None of the contemporary documents known at this time mention anything about his schooling. We know only that he held a licenciante in canon law but not in sacred theology. The bull of his nomination to the see of Michoacán was made out to him as though he were a licenciante in sacred theology, but with a lawyer's scrupulosity for exactness in official documents he asked the Holy See that this error be corrected. The correction was made in an apostolic brief, "Exponi nobis," of July 8, 1550.<sup>15</sup>

Anyone who deals with Quiroga's writings soon realizes the extent of his erudition. The most lengthy extant document written by Quiroga is the so-called "Información en derecho," composed in 1535. It was written as an objection to a royal decree allowing the purchase of slaves from the Indians, but it treated a wide range of more general questions of Indian policy. In it Quiroga mustered an impressive number of authorities to support or illustrate his points. Besides a large

---

<sup>14</sup>Cartas de Indias (Madrid, 1877), p. 827.

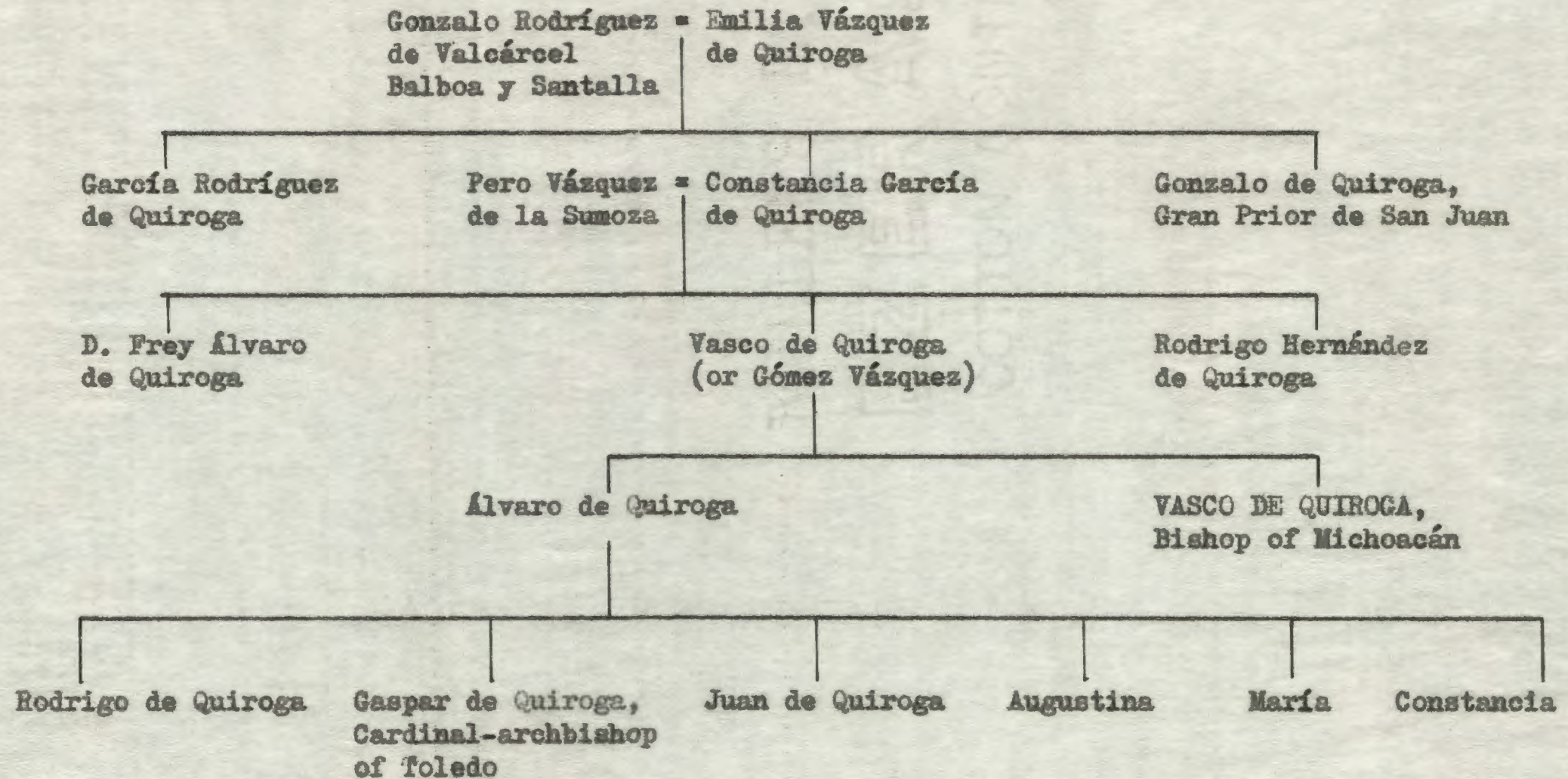
<sup>15</sup>Méndez Arceo, "Contribución a la historia de Don Vasco de Quiroga," pp. 207-208.







# GENEALOGICAL TABLE OF THE QUIROGA FAMILY









number of explicit and implicit references to Sacred Scripture, he also quoted extensively from the Fathers of the Church--St. John Chrysostom, St. Cyril, St. Athanasius, St. Basil, St. Augustine, and St. Ambrose. Among more recent ecclesiastical writers he quoted St. Antonine, Pope Innocent III, Cardinal Cajetan, Johann Faber, and John Gerson. He also took excerpts from a Carthusian Life of Christ and from a volume called Espejo de Religiosos. Among contemporary authors quoted or referred to are the humanists Guillaume Budé, Sebastian Brant, Antonio de Guevara, and Thomas More. His references to classical authors are not extensive, but they include Aristotle, Lucian, and Horace. Citations of strictly legal authorities, of course, are abundant, among them the codes of Aleric and Theodosius, the legists Angelo de Arecio, Christoforus, and Jason Maynus, and the decrees of the Council of Basle.<sup>16</sup> This array of authorities, which Quiroga was able to muster when he needed them, indicates how extensive and profitable must have been his reading. We know that he was still an avid reader of new books after he became older in Mexico, since it was then that he came into contact with the writings of Lucian and Thomas More.<sup>17</sup>

The early career of Vasco de Quiroga is still a closed book. The first references to him which the present writer could find in the Spanish archives date from March 1525, when Quiroga was in his fifties or nearly so. On March 6, 1525, Licenciado Vasco de Quiroga was in the

---

<sup>16</sup> Quiroga, "Información en derecho," passim.

<sup>17</sup> Ibid., pp. 381, 387.



number of explicit and implicit references to the...  
quoted extensively from the...  
St. Cyril, St. Athanasius, St. Basil, St. Gregory...  
among some recent ecclesiastical writers...  
Innocent III, Cardinal Guala, John...  
took excerpts from a...  
Baptist de Felip...  
are the humanistic...  
and Thomas More. His...  
but they include Aristotle,...  
legal authorities, of course...  
Aristotle and Theophrastus, the...  
Jason Marston, and the...  
authorities, which...  
indicated how extensive and...  
know that he was still an...  
in Mexico, since it was...  
of Mexico and Thomas More.

The early...  
The first references to...  
Spanish...  
or nearly so. On March 6, 1521...



North African city of Oran, acting as judge of residencia of the corregidor of that city, Licenciado Alonso Páez de Ribera.<sup>18</sup>

Oran had been taken from the Moslems by conquest only in 1509.<sup>19</sup> The Spaniards had a difficult time establishing a stable government for this small holding in the midst of Moslem kingdoms. Licenciado Páez de Ribera was commissioned by the Spanish crown to act as corregidor, or royal official in charge of overseeing the general civil administration of the colony. We know that Páez de Ribera was in Oran already in 1522, since among the Memoriales de Cámara in the Archive of Simancas for that year there appear a report from him on the insecurity of the beach of Oran and the villa of Mazalquivir, and also a note to the effect that he and his wife had taken articles of food and clothing from Christian, Moorish, and Jewish merchants and had distributed them among the Spanish troops, who were suffering from hunger and cold. At the time when the latter report was made, Páez de Ribera had returned to the royal court for some reason, probably to ask for help, and his wife was taking care of problems in Oran. The cost of the things taken from the merchants had been charged against the wages of the soldiers, and the corregidor was appealing that the wages be paid so as to satisfy the merchants.<sup>20</sup>

---

<sup>18</sup> Glaudio Burdilion y Tomás Breton y sus consortes saboyanos contra el licenciado Páez de Ribera, corregidor que fué de Orán sobre ciertas fardales de bordates, 1525, AGS, Consejo Real, leg. 97, fol. 3.

<sup>19</sup> Harold Livermore, A History of Spain (London, 1958), p. 201.

<sup>20</sup> AGS, Memoriales de Cámara, leg. 183, fol. 45; leg. 146, fol. 189.







A petition from the city of Oran, complaining of these activities of the corregidor, was sent to the crown on April 21, 1523, signed by all but one of the regidores of the city. They stated that Páez de Ribera had been in office for about three years and had done much harm to many people, taking away a large quantity of money from Jewish, Moorish, and Christian merchants and officials by way of loan and by other unjust and illegal means. At the time of the petition Páez was away from the city, and the town council requested that he be sent back to undergo a residencia.<sup>21</sup>

About this time also a group of the military leaders of Oran sent a petition before the Royal Council of Castile, objecting especially to the corregidor's arrest and trial of Luis Álvarez, capitán de la gente del campo for the city of Oran. Álvarez had been arrested for selling a horse to the Moors and for hiding some Moors, apparently sometime in late 1521. Ribera had held him in prison without sentence and without bond for two months. The case had been appealed to the Chancillería of Granada on March 21, 1522, and was later taken before the Royal Council itself, accompanied by a letter of attorney from all the military leaders of the Oran area.<sup>22</sup>

A blank cedula of appointment of a judge of residencia for Oran was found among the Memoriales de Cámara, signed by the King in Logroño, October 3, 1523. The judge was instructed to read a report from Oran by Bartolomé Ruyz de Castañeda before going to his assignment. The

---

<sup>21</sup>Ibid., leg. 157, fol. 24.

<sup>22</sup>Ibid., leg. 163, ininventariados.







judge was especially warned to look into frauds of the military officials, who were reportedly keeping on their list useless and absent men as well as their servants and friends, paying salary to these men in clothing and munitions, and also collecting salary for absent, dead, and captive soldiers. Further, he was to check reports that the captains and officers were using for their own enterprises the soldiers who were on a salary from the crown. He was also to look into possible offenses of the corregidor and other officials.<sup>23</sup>

This cedula was apparently put into effect only after considerable delay. The actual transcript of the judgment of residencia carried out by Quiroga in Oran has not come to light, so we do not know the exact date when he undertook his work there. We can say with certainty, however, that as late as November 29, 1524, Ribera's teniente in Oran, Licenciado Pedro de Liminiana, was judging cases in the city.<sup>24</sup> The earliest record of Quiroga's activity there begins on March 6, 1525, the first date in a suit by two Savoyan merchants, Claudio Burdilion and Tomás Breton, against Páez de Ribera for having confiscated some of their goods. The two merchants presented a claim for eighty-five bales of a type of cloth called bordat which they evaluated at 65 doblas per bale, or a total of 5,625 [sic] doblas and they also claimed 5,000 doblas in losses ensuing from the confiscation. They petitioned that the

---

<sup>23</sup>Ibid., leg. 163, fol. 50.

<sup>24</sup>El Licenciado Liminiana con el Licenciado Quiroga, juez de residencia de Orán, sobre haber éste anulado una sentencia dada por el primero como juez de residencia contra Baptista Caxines condenándole a restitución de 30 ducados de oro, 1526, AGS, Consejo Real, leg. 30, fol. 11.



judges was especially anxious to look into records of the military officials, who were reportedly keeping on their list names and names of men as well as their servants and friends, paying money to them and in clothing and munitions, and also collecting money for payment, food, and clothing. Further, he was to check reports from the captain and officers were being for their own convenience the soldiers who were in a hurry from the crowd. He was also to look into possible witnesses of the massacre and other officials.<sup>23</sup>

This order was apparently not into effect only after considerable delay. The actual transcript of the judgment or resolution carried out by Quiros in Oren has not come to light, so we do not know the exact date when he undertook his work there. We can say with certainty, however, that as late as November 23, 1924, Quiros's residence in Oren, Rioacacha Pedro de Alcantara, was judicial case in the city.<sup>24</sup> The earliest record of Quiros's activity there begins on March 6, 1925. The first date is a suit by the lawyer-merchant, Ricardo Barrios and some others, against Pedro de Alcantara for having confiscated some of their goods. The two merchants presented a claim for eight-five pesos of a type of cloth called *banda* which they evaluated at 25 pesos per bale, or a total of 2,125 pesos. Quiros and they also claimed 2,000 pesos in losses coming from the confiscation. They petitioned that the

<sup>23</sup> *Ibid.*, 102, 103, 104, 105.

<sup>24</sup> *El Comercio* (Lima), 102, 103, 104, 105. The first date is a suit by the lawyer-merchant, Ricardo Barrios and some others, against Pedro de Alcantara for having confiscated some of their goods. The two merchants presented a claim for eight-five pesos of a type of cloth called *banda* which they evaluated at 25 pesos per bale, or a total of 2,125 pesos. Quiros and they also claimed 2,000 pesos in losses coming from the confiscation. They petitioned that the



corregidor give bond for the loss or be kept in custody. Quiroga acceded to their request, imprisoning Ribera first in the house where Quiroga himself was staying and later in a sala of the castle of Razaloázar for greater security. His imprisonment was to be without bonds or other restraints, and he was to be free within the limits of his prison to carry out everything necessary for the defense of his rights. He was commanded to appoint an attorney who would appear in his place at the hearings of the residencia. He appointed Licenciado Liminiana as his attorney. The case ran on all through the summer of 1525, while the other business of the residencia was undoubtedly also being carried on. Finally on August 16 Quiroga moderated the claims and passed sentence in favor of Burdilion and Breton. Ribera was ordered to restore the bundles of bordates or to pay 60 Moorish doblas (at a rate of 350 maravedís per dobla) for each bundle. Moreover, he was condemned to pay 1,500 doblas for loss of interest and profit to the merchants, 800 ducados for certain taxes that the merchants had paid, and 600 ducados for loss suffered when a boatload of cloth from Europe had turned back for fear of Ribera. The corregidor was also assessed the costs of the litigation. On September 2 Ribera presented a royal cedula, dated February 1, 1525, allowing him to appeal any large-scale penalties that might be imposed on him. The wording of the cedula indicates that the residencia had already been well under way by the beginning of February.<sup>25</sup>

---

<sup>25</sup>Glandio Burdilion y Tomás Breton y sus consortes saboyanos contra el Licenciado Páez de Ribera, 1525, AGS, Consejo Real, leg. 97, fol. 3.







Another brief but complicated suit which survives from the period of Quiroga's activities in Oran was centered around a certain rich Genoese merchant named Baptista Caxines. Sometime during Ribera's tenure of office, Caxines had made an agreement with a tailor named Alexos de Pastrana that for the sum of 24 ducados Pastrana's wife, María de Garay, would live with Caxines for a year. In October 1524 the case was heard before Ribera's teniente, Licenciado Liminiana. On November 24 of the same year Liminiana condemned Caxines to a fine of 24 ducados for the cámara real and repairs to the government buildings. In March 1525 Caxines appealed the case before Quiroga. After a few preliminary petitions the case was dropped until November. Then Quiroga reversed the previous decision, not because he judged Caxines innocent but because he considered that the cámara real and the city of Oran had no right to exact a fine in this case in which neither of them had suffered damage. It was a decision formed strictly according to the dictates of law, even though it must have gone against the feelings of Quiroga, who, as we know from other sources, was a man of strict moral principles.

The case did not end there. A new corregidor and judge of residence, Doctor Sancho de Librija, arrived in the summer of 1526, and Quiroga had to give an account of his stewardship. On August 11, 1526, Licenciado Liminiana charged that his sentence against Caxines had been unjustly revoked by Quiroga in ill will merely to prove that what Liminiana had done was done badly. Librija judged in favor of Liminiana and the case was remitted to the Royal Council. The final act of the suit in Oran was made on September 27, 1526, when Quiroga pledged



another brief but significant period of activity in the...  
rich Chinese market...  
tenure of office...  
Alison de Fontenay...  
Marta de Góngora...  
the case was heard before...  
November 22 of the same year...  
22 inches for the...  
In March 1935...  
preliminary petition...  
reversed the previous decision...  
but because he...  
no right to exact...  
fired damage...  
of law, even though...  
who, as we know...  
The case...  
residence, Boston...  
and Guitry had to give...  
1936,...  
had been unjustly...  
what...  
Lindsay and the case...  
of the suit in...

COLLON COULENT  
EZEVRASE



his goods against possible penalties. This is the last date we have for Quiroga's activities in Oran.<sup>26</sup>

The new corregidor of Oran must have arrived in late July or early August 1526. Quiroga, in order to protect himself against heavy fines resulting from his residencia, obtained a cedula from the Council, limiting the extent to which he could be fined without appeal.<sup>27</sup> The cedula was signed by the Council in Granada on August 2, 1526.

Nevertheless, Quiroga was called upon to carry out one more official function even after the new corregidor had arrived. In virtue of a cedula issued in Granada on June 23, 1526, while Quiroga was still actually judge of residencia, he was empowered to act as one of the representatives of the Spanish crown in drawing up a new treaty of peace with the King of Tremecen, a Moorish state bordering on Oran. The other Spanish representative was Pedro de Godoy, lieutenant of Don Luis Hernández de Córdoba, who was captain general of the Spanish forces in Tunis and Tremecen. Abdula, the King of Tremecen, was represented by five ambassadors: Hadix Lentuni, and Buzien (or Bucacen), Moorish knights; Hayn, the sheik (xegue) of the Jews of Tremecen; and Xoa and Beniacar, Jewish servants of the King of Tremecen. There had apparently been considerable bickering over the amount of tribute that the King of Tremecen should pay. He had offered an annual tribute of 5,000 doblas de parias (also called doblas moriscas), pleading that this was all he could

---

<sup>26</sup>El Licenciado Liminiana con el Licenciado Quiroga, 1526, AGS, Consejo Real, leg. 30, fol. 11.

<sup>27</sup>Ibid.



give because he had just won the highest prize for his work, who had managed it only as a result of the original and extraordinary efforts. The Spaniards had held out for more, but the British had insisted that this was all that could be done. The Spaniards were ready to break off negotiations at this point. The British were in, and on August 12, 1896, the new treaty was signed. In Gran, the new treaty was signed. The treaty was signed for royal approval where it was completed. The treaty was signed September 9, 1896.

It is hard to say to what extent the Spaniards were responsible for the articles of the treaty, since they were given up on the basis of a treaty. Along treaty after discussion and negotiation, the Spaniards were given up. Articles, however, show a sense of justice and equity that is characteristic of Europe. For instance, Article 10 of the treaty provided that it be signed to send representatives to the treaty. To comply with any instructions, he should not be allowed to sign the treaty. Spanish officials on one side, the British on the other, were given up. Article 11 stated that no vessel of the Spanish navy was to be anything that he knew was stolen. The vessel of the Spanish navy provided the latter received the vessel and kept the vessel. It is also provided that the article was stolen and the vessel was to be returned. However, the vessel must remain the same, if it is to be returned. Article 12 provided for the return of the vessel. The vessel was to be returned from anywhere else, provided it was in the Spanish navy.



they wished without being subjected to any impediment. Article thirteen gave the assurance that the vassals of the King of Tremecen would not be made Christians by force but might live freely under their own law in their houses and haciendas, and that in all the realms of Spanish monarchs they would be treated as vassals of those monarchs, guarding the laws of those realms.<sup>28</sup>

Quiroga's work in Oran was in many ways a preparation for the type of work that he would be called upon to carry out on a larger scale in the New World. He was sent to a recently conquered colony, one in which conditions were still unsettled and the relationship between conquered and conqueror had not been satisfactorily worked out. His work was to investigate the reported injustices of an official previously sent out by the crown, whose administration had aroused complaints from various groups in the colony. He was also working in an area where the majority of the people were of non-Spanish culture and background. In the New World he would meet with these same problems but they would be considerably more far-reaching and of greater basic importance.

After the completion of his work in Oran Quiroga again disappears from sight. In the records of the Casa Real in the Archive of Simancas there is reference to a Vasco de Quiroga between the years 1526 and 1529. He held the office of "mozo de la capilla" of Queen Juana la Loca in

---

<sup>28</sup> Tratado de paz ajustado entre Pedro de Godoy, teniente del Marqués de Comares, capitán general de los Reinos de Tremecen y Tunez y el Licenciado Quiroga, juez de residencia de Orán, y ciertos embajadores del rey de Tremecen, fecho en Orán a 12 de agosto de 1526, AGS, Consejo Real, leg. 61, fol. 5-v.



they wished without being subjected to any impediment. Article thirteen gave the assurance that the vessels of the line of commerce would not be made Christian by force but might live freely under their own law in their houses and haciendas, and that in all the realm of Spanish America they would be treated as vassals of those monarchs, enjoying the laws of those realms.<sup>28</sup>

Gallego's work in Peru was in many ways a preparation for the type of work that he would be called upon to carry out on a larger scale in the New World. He was sent to a recently conquered colony, one in which conditions were still unsettled and the relationship between conqueror and conquered had not been satisfactorily worked out. His work was to investigate the reported injustices of an official government sent out by the crown, whose administration had aroused complaints from various groups in the colony. He was also working in an area where the majority of the people were of non-Spanish origin and backward. In the New World he would meet with these same problems but they would be considerably more far-reaching and of greater basic importance.

After the completion of his work in Peru Gallego again disappeared from sight. In the records of the Casa Real in the Archive of Simancas there is reference to a Vasco de Gallego between the years 1525 and 1533. He held the office of "procurador de guerra" of Queen Juana la Loca in

---

<sup>28</sup> Tratado de paz ajustado entre Pedro de Toledo, Comendador del Rey de Navarra, capitán general de las Indias de Francia y Juan y el licenciado Gallego, Juan de Castellanos de León, y otros capitán de la armada del Rey de Navarra, fecha en León a 12 de agosto de 1525, AGI, Consejo Real, leg. 61, fol. 3-v.



Tordesillas. His brother, Gaspar de Quiroga, had held the office for fourteen years previously and had renounced it in favor of Vasco on February 2, 1526. Vasco was given the office by a royal letter patent dated Sevilla, April 28, 1526. His office allowed him to assist at all the hours of the divine office and all other functions celebrated in the royal chapel. For this he was paid 3,333 maravedís three times a year beginning on December 27, 1526, and continuing until he resigned the office on December 8, 1529. Occasionally he was also paid something in addition as ayuda de costa.<sup>29</sup>

Is this the same Vasco de Quiroga about whom we have been speaking? It is possible, but there are weighty considerations to the contrary. One fact to be considered is that nowhere is this mozo de la capilla referred to as Licenciado Quiroga. In all other royal documents referring to the Vasco de Quiroga in whom we are interested, he is always referred to by his proper title of licenciado. It seems unlikely that only in this case would his title be overlooked. Further, the humble office of mozo de la capilla with its meager pay of 9,999 maravedís per annum does not seem to be one that would attract a prominent letrado who had been carrying out important labors in the service of the Spanish crown.

On the other hand, the dates within which this Vasco de Quiroga held this office would lend some force to an argument identifying him with Licenciado Quiroga. The first payment of his salary was for the

---

<sup>29</sup>AGS, Casa Real: Vasco de Quiroga.







last third of the year 1526, a time when Licenciado Quiroga had just returned from his work in Oran and was in line for a small reward. His renunciation of the office on December 8, 1529, preceded by only five days Licenciado Quiroga's first summons to the royal presence prior to his appointment as oidor of New Spain.<sup>30</sup> It may be that he was given this small sinecure which he held until the first enquiries were made relative to the position in Mexico, but the opinion of the present writer is to the contrary.

The question of how Licenciado Vasco de Quiroga came by his appointment as oidor of New Spain is again shrouded in considerable darkness. The most enlightening statement regarding this problem was made by Nuño de Guzmán in 1540. In a recusation made as part of his residencia the ex-presidente of the Audiencia of Mexico was trying to prove bias of judgment on the part of Doctor Juan Bernal Díaz de Lugo, a member of the Council of the Indies. He stated that before Doctor Bernal became a member of the Council of the Indies he acted as a letrado of the Cardinal of Toledo, Juan de Tavera, who was president of the Royal Council of Castile. In this capacity Bernal was given certain letters from the bishops of Mexico City and Tlascala, carried by followers of the Marqués del Valle, Hernando Cortés, with the intent that they be shown to the Cardinal. These letters, which were highly critical of Guzmán, were passed on by Doctor Bernal to the Cardinal and, according to Guzmán, Bernal had used every means at his disposal to have Guzmán

---

<sup>30</sup> AGI, México, leg. 1088, T. 1529-1530, f. 125v.



last third of the year 1956, a line was drawn which was  
returned from his work in 1956 and was in line for a small  
renovation of the office on December 3, 1956, a renovation of the  
days of the 1950s. The line was drawn in 1956 and was in line  
his appointment as chief of the office. The line was drawn in 1956  
this small renovation which was made in 1956 and was in line  
relative to the position in 1956, but in 1956 the line was drawn  
is to the contrary.

The question of how the line was drawn is a question of  
appointment as chief of the office. The line was drawn in 1956  
darkness. The most enlightening statement was made by the  
made by the line in 1956. In a statement made in 1956, the  
residence of the ex-president of the United States, the line was  
prove him of judgment on the part of the United States, the line was  
a member of the Council of the United States. The line was drawn in 1956  
Bernal became a member of the Council of the United States. The line was drawn in 1956  
of the Cardinal of Toledo, Juan de Tavera, the line was drawn in 1956  
Council of Castile. In this capacity, Bernal was given certain powers  
from the bishop of Mexico City and Tlaxcala, the line was drawn in 1956  
the Marqués del Valle, Hernando Cortés, with the line was drawn in 1956  
shown to the Cardinal. These letters, which were in his possession  
Guzmán, were passed on by Doctor Bernal to the Cardinal and the line was drawn in 1956  
to Guzmán, Bernal had used every means of his knowledge to have them



removed from office. In his zeal to remedy conditions in Mexico Bernal had also used his influence to have Licenciado Quiroga appointed as one of the oidores who were to go to New Spain to take the residencia of Guzmán and the members of the First Audiencia. Guzmán accused Bernal of having instructed Quiroga to do everything he could against him and in favor of the bishops and the Marqués del Valle. He claimed further that Bernal wrote Quiroga many letters, charging him to proceed with all rigor in the residencia of Guzmán and the oidores. Bernal, in his reply to Guzmán's accusations, denied that he had any bad will against the latter, but he did not deny his relationship with Quiroga.<sup>31</sup>

The general facts of Guzmán's statement stand up very well historically. Doctor Bernal entered the service of Cardinal Juan de Tavera in 1525 after having spent some years as ecclesiastical judge and vicar general of the diocese of Salamanca. In 1525 Tavera was Cardinal Archbishop of Santiago de Compostela, and soon afterwards he was moved to the even more important position of Cardinal Archbishop of Toledo, Primate of Spain. He was president of both the Chancillería Real of Valladolid and the Royal Council of Castile. During the time when the Emperor Charles V was absent from Spain, from July 1529 to April 1533, Tavera was the principal advisor of the Empress Isabella.<sup>32</sup> Thus Doctor Bernal was

---

<sup>31</sup>El señor fiscal con Nuño de Guzmán sobre cierta recusación que hizo del señor Doctor Bernal, 1540, AGI, Justicia, leg. 338.

<sup>32</sup>Tomás Marín, "La biblioteca del obispo Juan Bernal Díaz de Luco (1495-1556)," *Hispania Sacra*, V (1952), 263-326; Manuel de Foronda y Aguilera, Estancias y viajes del Emperador Carlos V desde el día de su nacimiento hasta el de su muerte (Madrid, 1914), pp. 327, 374.







in a position to exert considerable influence in regard to appointments that were of interest to him.

There are also ample indications of close ties of friendship between Bernal and Quiroga. There is a letter preserved in the Muñoz Collection in the Royal Academy of History, Madrid, dated April 23, 1553, from Quiroga, now bishop of Michoacán, to Bernal, now bishop of Calahorra. In it Quiroga mentioned the credit which Bernal had frequently given to his letters. Relying on this credit, Quiroga had sent him a treatise on the question of carrying on war with the Indians.<sup>33</sup> Accepting as true for the present Professor Marcel Bataillon's contention that Quiroga's "Información en derecho" of 1535 was directed to Dr. Bernal<sup>34</sup>--a question to which we shall return later--we find reference in this source also to several letters which Quiroga had addressed to his friend and also to an exchange of ideas which they had once had while traveling with the court from Burgos to Madrid.<sup>35</sup> This all points to a close friendship between Bernal and Quiroga, which might well have induced Bernal to use his influence in Quiroga's favor.

The attitude of these two men in regard to the Indians must have been very similar. Guzmán wrote the following of Doctor Bernal: "The said Doctor is so passionate and devoted in the favor of the Indians and in matters which pertain to them that he has an enmity toward those who

---

<sup>33</sup> Marcel Bataillon, "Vasco de Quiroga et Bartolomé de las Casas," Revista de Historia de América, No. 33 (June, 1952), pp. 84-86.

<sup>34</sup> Ibid., pp. 87-88.

<sup>35</sup> Quiroga, "Información en derecho," p. 299.







say they do not favor them or who enslave them even though it be done justly. . . ." <sup>36</sup> The same words could have been said of Quiroga, as anyone who has read the "Información en derecho" will readily agree.

There are also indications of a rather close tie between Cardinal Tavera and the Quiroga family. In the Archive of the Tavera Hospital in Toledo there are several documents in which reference is made to Rodrigo de Quiroga as the Cardinal's treasurer. The references begin as early as 1532. <sup>37</sup> From a small folder of letters in the archive we find that this Rodrigo belonged to the family of Cardinal Gaspar de Quiroga, Vasco's nephew. There are several letters to Rodrigo from Gaspar de Quiroga, then a licenciado, in one of which he signs himself as "your servant and younger brother." There are also letters from Doña María de Quiroga, who was living in Valladolid. She speaks to him of "our sister" and her family, makes several references to Madrigal, in particular to Juan de Quiroga, who was living in Madrigal and taking care of the properties there. <sup>38</sup> According to a pious fund which Cardinal Gaspar de Quiroga founded in Madrigal for the benefit of descendants of his family, his brothers and sisters were named--Rodrigo, Juan, Augustina, María, and Constancia. <sup>39</sup> The names of Rodrigo and Juan both appear among the confrades

<sup>36</sup> AGI, Justicia, leg. 338.

<sup>37</sup> Archivo del Hospital Tavera, Toledo, leg. 169.

<sup>38</sup> Ibid., leg. 178.

<sup>39</sup> Libro de becerros de la iglesia parroquial de San Nicolás de Bari la mayor de esta Villa de Madrigal, hecho en virtud de santa visita, año de 1773, Archivo Parroquial de Madrigal.



any they do not favor them as who would have been in the same

justice. . . . The same were named in the same way

anyone who has read the "Liberation" in the year 1811, will find

There are also indications of a third edition of the same work

Taverna and the other family. In the "Liberation" of 1811, it is

Told that there are several documents in which the name of the

entire as the Cardinal's secretary. The "Liberation" of 1811, it is

1752. 37 From a small folder of letters, the name of the

Rodriguez belonged to the family of Rodriguez, which was

nephew. There are several letters to Rodriguez, the name of the

than a lissencillo. In one of them the name of the

and younger brother. There are also letters to Rodriguez, the name of the

who was living in Valladolid. The name of the

family, makes several references to the name of the

entire, who was living in Madrid and taking care of the

there. 38 According to a plan that was made and signed by

founded in Madrid for the benefit of the poor, the name of the

brothers and sisters were named Rodriguez, the name of the

Constantine. 39 The names of Rodriguez and Constantine were

Constantine. 39 The names of Rodriguez and Constantine were

Constantine. 39 The names of Rodriguez and Constantine were

Constantine. 39 The names of Rodriguez and Constantine were

Constantine. 39 The names of Rodriguez and Constantine were

Constantine. 39 The names of Rodriguez and Constantine were

Constantine. 39 The names of Rodriguez and Constantine were

Constantine. 39 The names of Rodriguez and Constantine were

Constantine. 39 The names of Rodriguez and Constantine were

Constantine. 39 The names of Rodriguez and Constantine were

Constantine. 39 The names of Rodriguez and Constantine were

Constantine. 39 The names of Rodriguez and Constantine were



de Santiago of Madrigal in 1536.<sup>40</sup> Another kindness of Cardinal Tavera to the Quiroga family is indicated in a letter of Gaspar to Rodrigo from Valladolid, dated December 20, 1540. Gaspar had received a letter from the Cardinal, providing him with the vicaría of Alcalá. His enthusiastic statement is: "If Álvaro de Quiroga were alive he would not have done more for me. . . . I esteem this more than if he had made me oidor of this audiencia [i.e., of Valladolid]." <sup>41</sup> Did these ties between the Quiroga family and Cardinal Tavera precede or follow upon Vasco de Quiroga's advancement? In other words, were they the cause or the result of his attaining prominence? At the present stage of research it is difficult to answer these questions.

Cristóbal Cabrera gives us an interesting account of Quiroga's appointment as oidor of Mexico. As a young man Cabrera had lived and studied in Bishop Quiroga's residence in Michoacán. The elderly bishop shared with him many intimate details of his life and thought. In 1582 Cabrera, now an old man living in Rome, wrote down his reminiscences of his life with Quiroga, using the bishop as an example of missionary zeal.<sup>42</sup> Some of the details in Cabrera's story had undoubtedly become confused with the passage of nearly forty years since his departure from Mexico, but his narrative gives us personal views of Quiroga's life not to be found elsewhere.

---

<sup>40</sup>Libro de los confrades de Santiago, Archivo Parroquial de Madrigal.

<sup>41</sup>Archivo del Hospital Tavera, Toledo, leg. 178.

<sup>42</sup>Cabrera, pp. 19, 27.



the Sanctuary of Nebrizal in 1570.<sup>40</sup> Another kindness of Cardinal Tavera to the Gutierrez family is indicated in a letter of Gutierrez to Cardinal Tavera Valladolid, dated December 20, 1570. Tavera had received a letter from the Cardinal, providing him with the visita of Alcalá. His enthusiastic statement is: "If I were de Gutierrez were alive he would not have done more for me. . . . I assure this more than if he had made me a visit of this misericordia [i.e., of Valladolid]." <sup>41</sup> The close ties between the Gutierrez family and Cardinal Tavera's presence or follow upon Tavera de Gutierrez's advancement? In other words, were they the cause or the result of his attaining prominence? At the present stage of research it is difficult to answer these questions.

Cardinal Cabrera gives us an interesting account of Gutierrez's appointment as prior of Mexico. As a young man Cabrera had lived and studied in Bishop Gutierrez's residence in Michoacán. The elderly bishop shared with him many intimate details of his life and thought. In 1582 Cabrera, now an old man living in Rome, wrote down his reminiscences of his life with Gutierrez, using the bishop as an example of missionary zeal. <sup>42</sup> Some of the details in Cabrera's story had undoubtedly become confused with the passage of nearly forty years since his departure from Mexico, but his narrative gives an accurate view of Gutierrez's life not to be found elsewhere.

---

<sup>40</sup> Libro de los conuincidos de Santiago, Archivo Parroquial de Madrid.

<sup>41</sup> Archivo del Hospital Real, folio 17v.

<sup>42</sup> Cabrera, pp. 19, 27.



He states that Quiroga, after gaining royal favor for his work as a judge in Spain and Africa, was uncertain as to how to direct his future. Emperor Charles V, through Cardinal Tavera who had the highest regard for Quiroga, offered him several alternatives--the governorship of a Spanish province, the position of Inquisitor, some office related to the conversion of the Jews, or some high office in New Spain. Quiroga, in a quandary, turned to prayerful meditation for a solution of the problem. Entering a monastery church one day while the monks were reciting their office, he was struck by the words of the psalm: "Offer up the sacrifice of justice and trust in the Lord. Many say, who showeth us good things?"<sup>43</sup> He felt that it was a call for him to offer himself as a sacrifice of justice by accepting an official position for the good of the Indians, who were crying out to God: "Who will show us good things?" Accompanied by Cardinal Tavera, he went to the Emperor and explained his inspiration. The Emperor expressed his happiness at Quiroga's choice, stating that he thought it would be pleasing to God, meritorious for Quiroga, advantageous to the natives, and a source of glory to the crown.<sup>44</sup>

If such an interview between Quiroga and Charles V actually occurred, it must have happened quite some time before the actual reorganization of the Audiencia of Mexico. The Emperor left Spain from Barcelona on July 27, 1529, not to return again until late April of 1533.<sup>45</sup> The

---

<sup>43</sup>Psalm IV, 6.

<sup>44</sup>Cabrera, pp. 21-22.

<sup>45</sup>Foronda y Aguilera, Estancias y viajes del Emperador Carlos V, pp. 327, 374.







first cédulas regarding the appointment of a new audiencia for New Spain were not issued until November 5, 1529,<sup>46</sup> but it may very well be true that at some time before Charles V's departure they discussed the question of Quiroga's accepting a position in New Spain and decided that he would be given an appointment when the opportunity presented itself.

From Cabrera's words it is evident that Quiroga accepted the position in New Spain in a spirit of dedication. Therefore we do not need to apply to him the somewhat slighting words of a piece of correspondence between the Council of the Indies and the Emperor, dated December 3, 1531. In the course of explaining their selection of Fray Alonso de Talavera, Jeronimite prior of Prado, as both governor and bishop of Honduras, they spoke of the difficulty of finding qualified men for offices in the New World, "seeing that for the Audiencia of Mexico, no man of any quality was found who for 2,000 ducados wished to go to be oidor."<sup>47</sup>

The first official indication that a change was to be made in the government of Mexico was given on November 5, 1529, when identical cédulas were sent from Madrid to the bishop of Badajoz, president of the Chancillería of Valladolid, and to the bishop of Mallorca, president of the Chancillería of Granada, charging them to inform themselves about two people in whom the proper qualifications were to be found, talk with them, and send their opinions to the Empress. They were reminded that

<sup>46</sup>AGI, México, leg. 1088, T. 1529-1530, ff. 94-94v.

<sup>47</sup>El consejo de Indias a su Majestad, 3 de diciembre, 1531, AGI, Indiferente General, leg. 737.



first cedulas regarding the appointment of a new administrator for the  
were not issued until November 5, 1529.<sup>46</sup> But it may well be true  
that at some time before Charles V's departure from Spain on the question  
of Salazar's accepting a position in the Indies and that he would  
be given an appointment when the opportunity presented itself.

From Salazar's words it is evident that he was accepted for  
position in New Spain in a spirit of dedication. Therefore we do not  
need to apply to him the somewhat striking words of a class of contemporaries  
between the Council of the Indies and the Emperor, dated December 5,  
1521. In the course of explaining their selection of Fray Alonso de  
Valverde, Jeronimo prior of Toledo, as both governor and bishop of  
Honduras, they spoke of the difficulty of finding qualified men for  
offices in the New World, "seeing that for the Americas of Mexico, no  
man of any quality was found who for 2,000 ducados wished to go to be  
other."<sup>47</sup>

The first official indication that a change was to be made in the  
government of Mexico was given on November 5, 1529, when identical  
cedulas were sent first to the bishop of Badajoz, president of the  
Chancilleria of Valladolid, and to the bishop of Salamanca, president  
of the Chancilleria of Granada, charging them to inform themselves about  
two people in whom the proper qualifications were to be found, talk with  
them, and send their opinions to the Emperor. They were reminded that

---

<sup>46</sup> AGI, Mexico, leg. 1088, ff. 1529-1530, ff. 94-95r.

<sup>47</sup> El Consejo de Indias a los Chancilleres de Valladolid, 5 de diciembre, 1521, AGI, Indiferente General, leg. 737.



these men would be not only judges, as were oidores in Spain, but would be responsible for the government of the land. The annual salary offered was 600,000 maravedís, plus 150,000 maravedís in ayuda de costa, the total equaling 2,000 ducados, which it was thought would enable them not only to live honorably but also to save a good part.<sup>48</sup>

The first official communication with Quiroga was sent from Madrid on December 13, 1529. It is a very brief letter from the Empress which stated: "Licenciado Quiroga: because your person is necessary to attend to some matters of our service, I command you that as soon as you receive this you shall set out and come to me, and shortly you will be sent out."<sup>49</sup> This gives support to the idea that there was already an understanding with Quiroga beforehand.

Another cedula was sent to Quiroga from Madrid on January 2, 1530. In it the Empress expressly stated that he had been chosen as one of the oidores for the Audiencia of Mexico and he was again asked to come immediately so that he might soon be sent out. Over and above his salary he was promised the rewards that his services might merit. Similar cedulae were sent the same day to Licenciado Alonso Maldonado, colegial del colegio de Salamanca, and to a Licenciado de Cáceres.<sup>50</sup> The latter apparently did not accept, for he did not become one of the oidores.

Accompanying the cedula to Quiroga of January 2, 1530, was a letter of Juan de Sámano, royal secretary, in which he explained the

<sup>48</sup>AGI, México, leg. 1088, T. 1529-1530, ff. 94-94v.

<sup>49</sup>Ibid., f. 125v.

<sup>50</sup>Ibid., f. 145.



those men would be not only judges, as were officers in Spain, but would be responsible for the government of the land. The annual salary offered was 600,000 maravedis, plus 150,000 maravedis in ayuda de costa, the total equalling 750,000 maravedis, which it was thought would enable them not only to live honorably but also to save a good part.<sup>48</sup>

The first official communication with Gutierrez was sent from Madrid on December 15, 1523. It is a very brief letter from the Emperor which stated: "Licenciado Gutierrez: because your person is necessary to attend to some matters of our service, I command you that as soon as you receive this you shall set out and come to me, and shortly you will be sent out."<sup>49</sup> This gives support to the idea that there was already an understanding with Gutierrez beforehand.

Another cedula was sent to Gutierrez from Madrid on January 2, 1520. In it the Emperor expressly stated that he had been chosen as one of the officers for the Audiencia of Mexico and he was again asked to come immediately so that he might soon be sent out. Over and above his salary he was promised the reward that his services might merit. Similar cedulas were sent the same day to Licenciado Alonso Melchamado, cofezal del colegio de Salamanca, and to a Licenciado de Caceres.<sup>50</sup> The latter apparently did not accept, for he did not become one of the officers. Accompanying the cedula to Gutierrez of January 2, 1520, was a letter of Juan de Sotomayor, royal secretary, in which he explained the

---

<sup>48</sup> AGI, Mexico, leg. 1028, f. 152v-153r, ff. 94-94v.

<sup>49</sup> Ibid., f. 153v.

<sup>50</sup> Ibid., f. 145.



matter of salary. Quiroga would begin to receive his annual salary of 750,000 maravedís upon setting sail from Seville or Sanlucar, but would be given 400 ducados (150,000 maravedís) of salary in advance to prepare himself for the trip. He was told that he was not to enter into any other gainful work but was to devote his whole time to the audiencia.<sup>51</sup> In the cedula of January 2, 1530, Quiroga was addressed with the title "nuestro juez de comisión."<sup>52</sup> The cedula and the letter of Juan de Sámano were carried to Quiroga by a courier, but there is no indication of his destination.<sup>53</sup> In a cedula of March 11, 1530, concerning the accounts of Juan de Sámano, there is an entry apparently from early 1530 which indicates that he paid four ducados to a peón who went to Murcia to Licenciado Quiroga.<sup>54</sup> It seems, therefore, that Quiroga must have been carrying out some commission of the crown in Murcia, perhaps another work similar to what he had done in Oran.

Although the cedula to the bishops of Badajoz and Mallorca had said that the new audiencia was to embark in January 1530,<sup>55</sup> the delay in finding men to fill the positions prevented them from leaving Spain that soon. The cedula of appointment were made out only on April 5, 1530. By this time the complete audiencia had been assembled, with all the

---

<sup>51</sup> Quiroga vs. Martín Cortés, ff. 18-18v. Printed defectively in León, Quiroga, p. 172.

<sup>52</sup> AGI, México, leg. 1088, T. 1529-1530, f. 145.

<sup>53</sup> Quiroga vs. Martín Cortés, f. 18.

<sup>54</sup> AGI, Indiferente General, leg. 422, T. 1529-1530, f. 55v.

<sup>55</sup> AGI, México, leg. 1088, T. 1529-1530, ff. 94-94v.







members who would eventually set out for New Spain. In the official registro the cedula for Quiroga is written out in full, with a notation following it to indicate that cedulae of the same tenor were made out for the other three oidores: Alonso Maldonado, Francisco de Ceinos, and Juan de Salmerón.<sup>56</sup> Another cedula of the same date was made out for each of the oidores, directed to the oficiales of the Casa de la Contratación in Sevilla, instructing the officials to give the oidores the 150,000 maravedís in advanced salary that they were to use in preparing for their trip.<sup>57</sup> A third cedula of the same date commanded the treasury officials of New Spain to include in the account of the salary of each oidor the added 150,000 maravedís which they were to be given annually as ayuda de costa.<sup>58</sup>

Now for a moment, before sending Quiroga off to the New World, we will try to get a glimpse of his character. To do this we will have to anticipate later documentation, as most of the personal information that we have concerning him comes from the period of his work in the New World. The traditional image of Quiroga is that of a very fatherly and saintly man, a man with a far-reaching love for the poor and oppressed, the miserable and defenseless. This image can be verified from his written works (e.g., the "Información en derecho," the "Reglas y ordenanzas para los hospitales de Santa Fe," the "Testamento") as well as from the

---

<sup>56</sup>Ibid., ff. 223-226.

<sup>57</sup>Ibid., ff. 226-226v.

<sup>58</sup>Ibid., ff. 227-227v.



members who would eventually be the first to be  
 rejected the code for which the first was  
 following it to indicate that the first was  
 for the other three others. When the first was  
 Juan de Salazar.<sup>56</sup> Another member of the first was  
 each of the others, directed by the first to be  
 protection in Sevilla, instruction. He obtained a  
 150,000 maravedis in advance, which was to be in  
 for their trip.<sup>57</sup> A third member of the first was  
 officials of New Spain to justice in the name of the  
 order the ended 150,000 maravedis which was to be  
 as ayuda de costa.<sup>58</sup>

Now for a moment, before heading back to the  
 we will try to get a glimpse of his work. To do this we will have  
 to anticipate later documentation, the work of the second of the  
 that we have concerning him. It is the period of his work in the  
 world. The traditional image of him is that of a very tall, thin  
 saintly man, a man with a long beard and a long hair.  
 the miserable and deformed. When he was seen by the first of his  
 written work (e.g., the "Inventario de los libros de la  
 para los hospitales de Santa Fe" (1511-1512) as well as the

<sup>56</sup> Ibid., ff. 233-234.  
<sup>57</sup> Ibid., ff. 235-236.  
<sup>58</sup> Ibid., ff. 237-238.

REVERSE



actual works of charity for which his name is remembered. It is also verified by the word of Cristóbal Cabrera, who knew him very personally and saw him treat with the Indians as a tender father.<sup>59</sup>

His sanctity was attested in 1536 by Don Manuel Flores, dean of the cathedral church of Mexico City, who stated that after much conversation with Licenciado Quiroga he believed by God and his conscience that Quiroga had never knowingly done an act that would constitute a mortal sin and that no friar of the land outdid him in living religiously.<sup>60</sup> This characteristic, however, did not appeal equally to all. In the opinion of the conquistador, Bernaldino Vázquez de Tapia, Quiroga was more fit to be a friar than an oidor and judge.<sup>61</sup>

Quiroga tended to be rather severe with those who were pressing claims before him. Licenciado Cristóbal Benavente, fiscal of the audiencia, asserted in 1545 that he had seen Quiroga deal severely with litigants, sometimes justly, sometimes not.<sup>62</sup> Francisco de Lerma, procurador of the audiencia, testified in 1536 that Quiroga had sent ex-oidor Juan Ortiz de Matienzo to prison because of an altercation that had arisen in the course of a law suit.<sup>63</sup> The cabildo of Mexico City determined, on April 29, 1534, to make an official complaint before the audiencia because of the high-handed way in which Quiroga had treated

<sup>59</sup> Cabrera, pp. 22-23.

<sup>60</sup> Aguayo Spencer, p. 432.

<sup>61</sup> RSA, f. 237v.

<sup>62</sup> AGI, Justicia, leg. 258.

<sup>63</sup> RSA, f. 213v.



actual works of charity for which his name is remembered. It is also  
verified by the word of Cristobal Gutierrez, who knew him very personally  
and saw him treat with the Indians as a tender father.<sup>59</sup>  
His sanctity was attested in 1535 by Don Manuel Flores, dean of  
the cathedral church of Mexico City, who stated that after much con-  
versation with Licenciado Gutierrez he believed by God and his conscience  
that Gutierrez had never knowingly done an act that would constitute a  
mortal sin and that no trial of the kind could find him in living relationship.<sup>60</sup>  
This characteristic, however, did not appeal equally to all. In the  
opinion of the comptroller, Bernardino Vazquez de Tapia, Gutierrez was  
more fit to be a friar than an older and judge.<sup>61</sup>  
Gutierrez tended to be rather severe with those who were pressing  
claims before him. Licenciado Cristobal Benavente, Bishop of the  
audiencia, asserted in 1545 that he had seen Gutierrez deal severely with  
litigants, sometimes justly, sometimes not.<sup>62</sup> Vazquez de Tapia,  
procurador of the audiencia, testified in 1575 that Gutierrez had sent an-  
other Juan Ortiz de Matienzo to prison because of an altercation that had  
arisen in the course of a law suit.<sup>63</sup> The arrival of Mexico City before  
him, on April 29, 1534, to make an official complaint before the  
audiencia because of the high-handed way in which Gutierrez had treated

<sup>59</sup> Cabrera, pp. 22-23.

<sup>60</sup> Araya Spencer, p. 432.

<sup>61</sup> BSA, I, 237v.

<sup>62</sup> AGI, Justicia, leg. 378.

<sup>63</sup> BSA, I, 237v.



them on the previous day when they were presenting a petition.<sup>64</sup>

Like most idealists Quiroga had a strong conviction of the validity of his own ideas. In speaking of his idea that the organization of More's Utopia should be made the form for reorganizing the whole Indian life of the New World, he wrote that "perchance none other [remedy] will be found so quickly which will be so sufficient or so necessary or so universal or so easy for these natives, taking into account the quality and manner of the land and of the natives of this entirely new world, or so well applied for everything necessary. . . ."<sup>65</sup> In his will, speaking of his pueblos de Santa Fe, he said: "With difficulty will one be able to find in these parts another thing better or more pious or more necessary in which almost all possible types of hospitality come together as they do in this. . . ."<sup>66</sup> It was undoubtedly this conviction of his own rightness that led him into the plethora of lawsuits which characterized his whole life as a bishop.

His studiousness is a trait that we mentioned above. It is indicated by the library of 626 books that he had at the time of his death.<sup>67</sup> Cabrera gives us a picture of Quiroga laboring studiously over his books long past midnight, sending his young companion to sleep while

<sup>64</sup>AC, III, 81.

<sup>65</sup>Quiroga, "Información," p. 302.

<sup>66</sup>Quiroga, "Testamento," p. 282.

<sup>67</sup>León, Quiroga, p. 104.



then on the previous day when they were presenting a petition.<sup>64</sup>

Like most idealists Gullone had a strong conviction of the validity of his own ideas. In speaking of his idea that the nation of more's *Utopia* should be made the form for reorganizing the whole human life of the New World, he wrote that "perhaps some other [remedy] will be found so easily which will be no sufficient or so necessary or so universal or so easy for these natives, but into account the quality and manner of the land and of the natives of this entirely new world, or so well applied for everything necessary. . . .<sup>65</sup> In his will, speaking of his question de Santa Fe, he said: "With difficulty will one be able to find in these parts another thing better or more given or more necessary in which almost all possible types of hospitality come together as they do in this. . . .<sup>66</sup> It was undoubtedly this conviction of his own rightness that led him into the plethora of lawsuits which characterized his whole life as a bishop.

His studiousness is a trait that is mentioned above. It is indicated by the library of 600 books that he had at the time of his death.<sup>67</sup> Cabrera gives us a picture of Gullone laboring strenuously over his books long past midnight, sending his young companion to sleep while

---

<sup>64</sup>AC, III, 61.  
<sup>65</sup>Gullone, "Información," p. 303.  
<sup>66</sup>Gullone, "Testamento," p. 262.  
<sup>67</sup>Laón, Gullone, p. 104.



he himself took only the briefest rest at the approach of dawn.<sup>68</sup>

Having taken this brief glimpse of Quiroga's personality, we will follow him across the Atlantic to his labors in New Spain.

---

<sup>68</sup>Cabrera, pp. 26-27.







### CHAPTER III

#### THE IDEA OF THE PUEBLOS DE SANTA FE

The members of the Second Audiencia set sail from Sevilla on August 25, 1530.<sup>1</sup> Their route took them by way of Santo Domingo where Quiroga conferred with Bishop Sebastián Ramírez de Fuenleal, president of the audiencia of Santo Domingo, who had been commissioned to preside over the new audiencia in Mexico.<sup>2</sup> Possibly this was a renewal of acquaintance, since Ramírez had previously been an oidor of the audiencia of Granada, which had jurisdiction over Oran.<sup>3</sup>

By December 16, 1530, Licenciados Ceinos and Salmerón had arrived in Veracruz, ahead of their two companions.<sup>4</sup> On December 30, 1530, the cabildo of Mexico City was informed that Licenciados Quiroga and Maldonado had arrived in Veracruz, and Francisco de Santaacruz and Francisco Flores were dispatched to meet them with a letter from the city.<sup>5</sup> Excitement in the city was running high with the anticipated arrival of the full audiencia. Licenciados Salmerón and Ceinos, who had preceded

---

<sup>1</sup>Joaquín García Icazbalceta, Don Fray Juan de Zumárraga, eds. Rafael Aguayo Spencer and Antonio Castro Leal (4 vols., México, 1947), I, 95.

<sup>2</sup>Carta al Consejo de Indias del Licenciado Quiroga, México, 14 de agosto de 1531, DII, XIII, 421.

<sup>3</sup>AGS, Estado-Castilla, leg. 14.

<sup>4</sup>AC, II, 72.

<sup>5</sup>Ibid., II, 74.



THE IDEA OF THE MUSEUM IN SANTA FE

The members of the second expedition set sail from Seville on August 25, 1550.<sup>1</sup> Their route took them by way of Santo Domingo where Quiroga conferred with Bishop Sebastián Ramírez de Guzmán, president of the audiencia of Santo Domingo, who had been commissioned to provide over the new audiencia in Mexico.<sup>2</sup> Possibly this was a reversal of acquaintance, since Ramírez had previously been an officer of the audiencia of Granada, which had jurisdiction over Quito.<sup>3</sup>

By December 16, 1550, Licenciados Ceinos and Salmerón had arrived in Veracruz, ahead of their two companions.<sup>4</sup> On December 30, 1550, the cabildo of Mexico City was informed that Licenciados Quiroga and Maldonado had arrived in Veracruz, and Francisco de Santarum and Francisco Flores were dispatched to meet them with a letter from the city.<sup>5</sup> Excitement in the city was running high with the anticipated arrival of the full audiencia. Licenciados Salmerón and Ceinos, who had preceded

<sup>1</sup> Juan de García Icazbalceta, *Don Juan de Guzmán*, ed. Rafael Aguayo Spencer and Antonio Castro Leal (4 vols., México, 1947), I, 95.

<sup>2</sup> Carta al Consejo de Indias del Licenciado Quiroga, México, 14 de agosto de 1551, DII, XII, 421.

<sup>3</sup> AGN, Estado-Castilla, leg. 14.

<sup>4</sup> AGN, II, 75.

<sup>5</sup> *Ibid.*, II, 74.



their companions to the capital, were requested by the cabildo on January 4, 1531, to prepare the city for the arrival of the other two, and the cabildo also commanded the citizenry to prepare to go out to meet the two remaining oidores.<sup>6</sup> Finally, on January 9, 1531, Quiroga and Maldonado were ready to enter the city. The cabildo decreed under penalty of five pesos that all who had horses or mules should ride out to meet the incoming oidores.<sup>7</sup>

The enthusiasm of the welcome given to the new oidores was due in no small extent to the number of problems that were awaiting their attention. Disputes over encomiendas, injustices of the First Audiencia, bitter differences between the colonists and the friars, maltreatment and enslavement of the Indians--these and many other difficulties faced the new governing body, calling for immediate action. A problem that seems to have attracted Quiroga's attention almost immediately was that of the reorganization of Indian society.

The Spanish conquest had disrupted to a serious extent the native way of life. The new Spanish lords of the land brought a different system of government, unfamiliar laws and social customs, entirely distinct attitudes on many aspects of life, and a new religion. They had also taken off many of the able-bodied Indians to fight in their wars, carry their supplies, or work in their mines. Sometimes the men returned, sometimes not. This left many women, children, and physically incapacitated people to fend for themselves, surrounded by people who were only

---

<sup>6</sup>Ibid., II, 77.

<sup>7</sup>Ibid., II, 78.



their companions to the capital, for they were not to be left in the hands of the enemy. In January, 1831, to prepare for the arrival of the Spanish fleet, and the castle also contained the necessary provisions for the most the two remaining officers. In the month of January, 1831, the and Malabares were sent to the capital to be with the rest of the party of five persons that all the troops were sent to the capital to meet the incoming officers. The enthusiasm of the soldiers lived to the point of enthusiasm and in no small extent to the number of soldiers that were sent to the capital. Disputes over emancipation, a question of the 18th of January, 1831, bitter differences between the colonists and the Spanish, and the bitter enslavement of the Indians--these and many other difficulties were the new governing body, calling for immediate action, a group of men to have attended to the affairs of the colony, and the fact of the recognition of Indian society. The Spanish colony had adopted to a certain extent the native way of life. The new Spanish life of the land is a different system of government, and the laws and social customs, and the fact that attention on many aspects of life, and the fact that also taken off many of the white-bellied Indians to live in the colony, carry their supplies, or work in their fields. Sometimes the men returned, sometimes not. This left many women, children, and the old people, and the fact that people to land for themselves, and the fact that the very

1831, II, 75.  
1831, II, 76.



too willing to take advantage of them, and lacking any organized form of social aid. Quiroga found many children running through the streets and market places, looking for food in what was left by the pigs and dogs.<sup>8</sup>

Another fact that troubled Quiroga was the scattered nature of Indian settlement. The licenciado came from one of the most highly urbanized countries of Europe. Anyone who travels through Spain must be struck by the fact that the countryside is almost devoid of dwellings. Early in the morning the roads are filled with carts and bicycles, teams and flocks of those who go out from the villages and towns to care for the surrounding fields. With the approach of dark they once more return to their pueblos to spend the night close to their family and friends and near the protective authority of Church and State. This way of life is of very ancient origin in Spain. It goes back at least to the period of Roman control, when the civitas was the unit of local administration. This tradition survived the Visigothic and Moorish invasions and became a necessary means of survival during the years of the Reconquest, when the isolated farmer was prey to every marauding band. Spanish concepts of law and government were built up largely upon the municipality as the basic administrative unit.<sup>9</sup> The Spaniard, then, when he came to the New World could not approach the Indian in the same way the Englishman or Frenchman could. The Northern Europeans could adjust much more easily

---

<sup>8</sup>Quiroga al Consejo, 14 de agosto, 1531, DII, XIII, 424.

<sup>9</sup>Clarence H. Haring, The Spanish Empire in America (New York, 1947), pp. 158-159.



was willing to take advantage of them, and lacking any organized form of social aid. Gutroga found any children running through the streets and market places, looking for food in what was left by the pigs and dogs.<sup>8</sup>

Another fact that troubled Gutroga was the scattered nature of Indian settlement. The Indians came from one of the most highly urbanized countries of Europe. Any man who traveled through Spain must be struck by the fact that the countryside is almost devoid of dwellings. Early in the morning the roads are filled with carts and bicycles, teams and flocks of those who go out from the villages and towns to care for the surrounding fields. With the approach of dark they once more return to their homes to spend the night alone to their family and friends and near the protective authority of Church and State. This way of life is of very ancient origin in Spain. It goes back at least to the period of Roman control, when the *divisa* was the unit of local administration. This tradition survived the Visigothic and Moorish invasions and became a necessary means of survival during the years of the Reconquest, when the isolated farmer was prey to every wandering band. Spanish concepts of law and government were built up largely upon the municipality as the basic administrative unit.<sup>9</sup> The Spaniards, then, when he came to the New World could not approach the Indian in the same way the Englishman or Frenchman could. The Northern Europeans could adjust much more easily

---

<sup>8</sup> Gutroga al Consejo, 14 de agosto, 1551, DII, XIII, 424.

<sup>9</sup> Clarence H. Haring, The Spanish Empire in America (New York, 1947), pp. 152-153.



than the Spaniard to life in an isolated frontier cabin or to traveling and trading in the midst of the Indians themselves. The tendency of the Spaniard was rather to gather the Indians into settlements where they could be controlled, instructed, and put to useful work. Such settlements also fitted much more easily into the system of Spanish government.

Quiroga, who was a product of the Spanish municipal system and an expert in its laws, felt a need for congregating the Indians so as to impart to them that all-inclusive concept of civilized life which the Spanish called policía. He also desired to instill in them some of his own vibrant Catholic faith. This enthusiasm for spreading the faith, which was to be found even among the rough conquistadores, was especially strong in this man of far more delicate ideals and deeper education. He saw that the Indians, scattered through the countryside, each with his own little hut surrounded by a patch of maize, could easily practice idolatry and ritual drunkenness without being detected. If they were gathered into towns where they could be watched over and instructed by a small number of friars, their introduction to Catholicism would be greatly facilitated.<sup>10</sup>

These three necessities--to care for the needy, to train the natives in a civilized way of life, and to instruct pagans in the Catholic faith--were the motives that led Quiroga to found his pueblo-hospitals of Santa Fe. We find them all present in the letter he wrote to the Council of the Indies on August 14, 1531. It was written to accompany

---

<sup>10</sup> Quiroga al Consejo, 1531, DII, XIII, 422-423.







a general letter sent by the four oidores of Mexico to the Council. Quiroga wished to expand on certain ideas, particularly the need that the president of the audiencia should come from Santo Domingo to join his colleagues as soon as possible, and the necessity of organizing the Indians into towns. During the seven months that he had spent in Mexico, Quiroga had seen the poverty and squalor to which the orphans and other unfortunates were reduced. A serious problem was also presenting itself in regard to the Indian boys who had been raised in the monasteries of the friars. Some of these children were already of marriageable age and the friars tried to arrange marriages for them. These boys knew not only how to be good Christians but how to read and write in their own language, in Spanish, and in Latin, how to sing chant, plain or with an organ, how to transcribe books of chant, and some could even preach. But if they were to return to their own people, like a dog returning to his vomit,<sup>11</sup> they would fall back into the idolatry and vicious habits of their relatives. On the other hand, the boys who were truly orphans had no land on which to plant crops nor any means of support. For the friars this was a constant source of worry and they had asked the oidores for a solution. Quiroga's proposal was that new pueblos be founded in the unused common lands of each of the old pueblos and that they be made up of the boys who had been trained by the friars. Two, three, or four friars would be placed in charge of them to watch over them closely until virtue should become second nature to them. This would not only salvage the training of the friars from being lost but would also bring

---

<sup>11</sup> Quiroga here quotes freely II Peter 2:22.



a general letter sent by the four editors of Mexico to the Council.  
Gutierrez wished to expand on certain ideas, particularly the need that  
the president of the committee should come from Santa Fe to join  
his colleagues as soon as possible, and the necessity of organizing the  
Indians into towns. During the seven months that he had spent in Mexico,  
Gutierrez had seen the poverty and squalor to which the Indians and other  
unfortunates were reduced. A serious problem was also presented itself  
in regard to the Indian boys who had been raised in the households of  
the friars. Some of these children were almost of marriageable age and  
the friars tried to arrange marriages for them. These boys knew not  
only how to be good Christians but how to read and write in their own  
language, in Spanish, and in Latin, how to sing chant, Latin or with  
an organ, how to transcribe books of chant, and some could even preach.  
But if they were to return to their own people, like a dog returning  
to his vomit,<sup>11</sup> they would fall back into the idleness and vicious habits  
of their relatives. On the other hand, the boys who were truly Christians  
had no land on which to plant crops nor any means of support. For the  
friars this was a constant source of worry and they had asked the older  
for a solution. Gutierrez's proposal was that new pueblos be founded in  
the unused common lands of each of the old pueblos and that they be made  
up of the boys who had been trained by the friars. Two, three, or four  
friars would be placed in charge of them to watch over them closely.  
Until virtue should become second nature to them. This would not only  
enlarge the training of the friars from being lost but would also bring

---

<sup>11</sup> Gutierrez here quotes twenty II Peter 2:12.



profit from the unused common lands. The establishment of these pueblos would also bring some order into the chaos and confusion of Indian life because, as Quiroga saw it, no one could understand their life nor could they be set in good political order nor impeded in their drunken sprees, idolatries and other evil rites and customs unless they were reduced to pueblos, well organized and regulated.

Quiroga found much to admire in the Indians. He was attracted by their natural, simple virtues--their humility, obedience, poverty, contempt of the world, and lack of interest in clothing. To his mind they were like the Apostles, going about barefooted, with long hair, and without any covering for the head. In fine, they were like a tabula rasa and like very soft wax that was ready to receive any impression. Quiroga maintained that through congregation into pueblos the Indians could be shaped into a new and strong type of Christians, like those of the primitive Church.

Quiroga proposed that the churches and buildings of the new pueblos should be built by the Indians of the area, since it was for the good of the Indians themselves and of their relatives and descendants. For the Spaniards the institution of the pueblos would be a work of satisfaction of conscience, since it was because of their wars and their severity toward the Indians in the mines that the Indian children were left without the care of their fathers.<sup>12</sup>

This letter of Quiroga's contains all characteristic ideas that motivated him in the formation of his pueblos de Santa Fe. Yet it does

---

<sup>12</sup> Quiroga al Consejo, 1531, DII, XIII, 421-424, 429.



profit from the mixed blood Indian. The settlement of these people would also bring some order into the chaos and confusion of Indian life because, as Quirós saw it, no one could maintain their life nor could they be set in good political order nor directed in their drunken orgies, idolatry and other evil rites and customs unless they were reduced to people, well organized and regulated.

Quirós found much to admire in the Indians. He was attracted by their natural, simple virtues--their humility, obedience, poverty, concept of the world, and lack of interest in clothing. To his mind they were like the apostles, young about harvest, with long hair, and without any covering for the head. In this, they were like a tribe and like very soft wax that was ready to receive any impression. Quirós maintained that through organization into people the Indians could be shaped into a new and strong type of Christians, like those of the primitive Church.

Quirós proposed that the churches and buildings of the new people should be built by the Indians of the area, since it was for the good of the Indians themselves and of their relatives and descendants. For the Spaniards the institution of the people would be a work of satisfaction of conscience, since it was because of their wars and their severity toward the Indians in the mines that the Indian children were left without the care of their fathers.

This letter of Quirós's contains all characteristic ideas that motivated him in the formation of his people in Santa Fe. Yet it does



not show any specific influence of the thought of St. Thomas More, which was to give the pueblos their peculiar form. As early as June 1533, however, the influence of More is evident in the name which is given to the building which he had erected sometime previously in the village of Santa Fe near Mexico City. On June 30, 1533, a complaint was made in the cabildo of México by Jerónimo López concerning Quiroga's project. He stated that it was already many days since Quiroga had started his work of construction and that he began it under the pretense of building one house which would be called a paterfamilias.<sup>13</sup> This term is undoubtedly the same as the expression familia which Quiroga used for the large housing complexes which were to be home for an extended family, a term which he derived from More's Utopia.<sup>14</sup>

We do not know when Quiroga first came into contact with More's Utopia, although it appears to have been after he came to the New World. The Library of the University of Texas has a copy of the Utopia which once belonged to Bishop Juan de Zumárraga. The marginal notations are of the type that we would expect Quiroga to have made, remarks pertaining mainly to the organizational aspects of Utopian society. But the handwriting, although similar to Quiroga's in many ways, shows some marked differences from Quiroga's other autographs.<sup>15</sup>

The earliest of Quiroga's writings which speaks explicitly of his admiration for the work of the English chancellor is the "Información

<sup>13</sup>AC, III, 41.

<sup>14</sup>Quiroga, "Ordenanzas," p. 258.

<sup>15</sup>More, Utopia (Latin), University of Texas Library, G093.M813.



not show any specific influence of the work of the...  
was to give the method some special...  
ever, the influence of the work is...  
building which he had erected...  
Santa Fe near Mexico City...  
the capital of Mexico...  
He stated that it was...  
work of construction and that he...  
one house which would be...  
doubtless the same as the...  
large housing complexes which...  
a form which he derived from...  
We do not know when...  
Utopia, although it appears to...  
The library of the University of...  
once belonged to Bishop Juan de...  
of the type that we would expect...  
ing mainly to the organizational...  
handwriting, although similar to...  
differences from Salazar's other...  
The earliest of Salazar's...  
his attention for the work of the...

<sup>13</sup>AO, III, 41.

<sup>14</sup>Salazar, "Ensayo," p. 123.

<sup>15</sup>More, Utopia (Paris), III, 41, 42.



en derecho" of July 24, 1535. The origin of this treatise goes back to the instructions which the Second Audiencia carried to New Spain. In these instructions, dated in Madrid, July 12, 1530, the crown had forbidden entirely the making of new Indian slaves whether by war or by purchase.<sup>16</sup> The instructions were accompanied by a cedula, dated August 2, 1530, which enforced the paragraph of the instructions relative to the enslavement of Indians. This cedula first gives a brief summary of the previous attitude of the crown regarding enslavement of Indians, allowing slaves to be taken in war or bought from other Indians. But, the cedula continues, this permission had been abused due to the unbridled greed of the conquerors and settlers, who caused unjust wars in order to enslave the Indians. The cedula then revoked all past, present, and future permissions to make Indian slaves, either by war or by purchase, under pain of complete loss of goods by those who captured or possessed the slaves and the return of the slaves to their homeland at the cost of the person who captured or possessed them. Within thirty days after the publication of the cedula in each jurisdiction the conquerors and settlers were to register their slaves by name in a book kept by the local official of justice, and in the future no more Indians should be enslaved.<sup>17</sup>

This regulation, as was to be expected, raised a storm of protest from the colonists, who depended on slaves to work their mines and carry out other difficult forms of labor. Appeals were made to the crown and council, and on February 20, 1534, the crown reversed its previous

---

<sup>16</sup> Puga, I, 163-164.

<sup>17</sup> Ibid., I, 231-234.







decision. The excuses given for this change were that the Indians were becoming uncontrollable, seeing that their rebellions could no longer be punished by enslavement, and, on the other hand, the colonists no longer had any motivation for participating in a just war. Moreover, in regard to purchased slaves (esclavos de rescate), the cedula maintained that they would be more easily withdrawn from idolatry if they were taken from the control of their native owners and that the Christians would be given support in the land. Under certain limitations the colonists were in the future to be allowed both to make slaves in just war and to purchase slaves owned by other Indians.<sup>18</sup>

The audiencia in Mexico had already enthusiastically committed itself to the execution of its instructions and of the cedula of 1530. It now found that it would be obliged to reverse completely its policy on slavery. The oidores protested against the new provision, writing to the Council as a group and individually.<sup>19</sup> Quiroga, in particular, undertook a lengthy refutation of the reasoning behind the new cedula. This complex and difficult piece of writing, his "Información en derecho," was dated in Mexico on July 24, 1535, although its composition must have taken a considerable length of time. The printed editions of the work make it appear to be directed to the King, since it begins with: "Por las cartas que a vuestra Majestad escribí. . . ." A consultation of the original manuscript, however, shows that the "vuestra Majestad" should be "vuestra

---

<sup>18</sup>Colección de documentos inéditos relativos al descubrimiento, conquista y organización de las antiguas posesiones de Ultramar (25 vols., Madrid, 1885-1928), X, 192, et seq.

<sup>19</sup>Quiroga, "Información en derecho," p. 291.



decision. The express given to this is that the  
becoming uncontractible, and that the  
remained by enslavement, and, on the other hand, the  
had any motivation for participating in a  
to purchased slaves (and even the  
would be more easily within the  
the control of their master and that the  
support in the land. Under certain  
the future to be allowed both to  
slaves owned by other Indians.

The analysis in Mexico that gave  
itself to the execution of the  
It now found that it would be  
slavery. The others presented a  
Council as a group and individual  
a largely refutation of the  
and difficult piece of  
in Mexico on July 24, 1935, also  
considerable length of time. The  
appear to be directed to the  
que a vestra majestad escribiere.  
manuscript, however, shows that the

<sup>18</sup> Coloquio de la memoria de la  
comunidad y organizacion de las  
Madrid, 1935-1936, p. 124, 125.

<sup>19</sup> Quirós, "Información de la"



merced."<sup>20</sup> The fact that it was directed to someone other than the king is also indicated in another place by the phrase: "su Majestad por sus provisiones y vuestra merced por sus cartas." Moreover, the salutation at the beginning, "Muy magnífico señor," is not such as would be used for the king but for some high royal official.<sup>21</sup> The person to whom the work is addressed was undoubtedly a member of the Council of the Indies, for it is written throughout as to one who would be directly involved in the decisions regarding the Indies. It seems highly probable, then, following the opinion of Professor Marcel Bataillon, that the work was directed to Quiroga's friend on the Council, Doctor Bernal.<sup>22</sup>

Here we do not need to study extensively Quiroga's opinions on Indian slavery. It is sufficient to say in summary that he believed the Indians had no true slaves in the European sense of chattel slavery. The prisoners whom they took in war were all sacrificed and therefore never became chattels. The people who sold themselves into slavery in times of necessity did not become a kind of human property as did a slave in Europe; rather it was a type of perpetual hiring of oneself, leaving the

---

<sup>20</sup> Biblioteca Nacional, Madrid, MS 7369. The error as to the recipient of the work was promoted by the title given to the manuscript: "Representación a Carlos V sobre la provisión que el Consejo de Indias despachó para que se pudiesen vender y herrar los Indios." The confusion was increased by the title given the first printed edition in DII, X, 333-513: "Información en derecho de licenciado Rojas sobre algunas provisiones del Real Consejo de Indias." This mistake as to authorship, which was corrected in the index of the volume, was due to the fact that at the conclusion of his work, Quiroga appended a parecer of Maestro Rojas and commented on it.

<sup>21</sup> Quiroga, "Información en derecho," pp. 295, 291.

<sup>22</sup> Marcel Bataillon, "Vasco de Quiroga et Bartolomé de las Casas," Revista de Historia de America, No. 33 (June, 1952), pp. 87-89.







person free to use his own property, have his own home and family, and raise free children. Quiroga attributed this form of contract to the fact that the Indians did not have an idea of temporary hiring of labor. He had gleaned this knowledge from several years of working with problems of Indian slavery with the assistance of four native elders who advised him regarding their customs and laws. His conclusion was that it was unjust to allow the Spaniards to purchase Indian slaves from Indian owners since it changed the type of slavery from a perpetual hiring to chattel slavery.<sup>23</sup>

What is of greater interest to us here is the revelation that this work gives us of certain influences on Quiroga's thinking. One of these was that of Lucian's Saturnalia which he had happened upon by chance as he was writing.<sup>24</sup> Some writers have considered the influence of the Greek author to have been profound upon Quiroga. For instance, Raúl Villaseñor lists Lucian among those who influenced in a most decisive manner the institution of Quiroga's hospitals.<sup>25</sup> This, however, seems to be an exaggerated view. Although Lucian's picture of life in the Golden Age gave Quiroga a frame of reference in which to speak of the simplicity of the Indians, it did not substantially change his views from those he had expressed in his letter of August 14, 1531. There is no evidence of any influence of the Saturnalia on the structure or organization of the

<sup>23</sup>Quiroga, "Información en derecho," passim.

<sup>24</sup>Ibid., p. 281.

<sup>25</sup>Raúl Villaseñor, "Luciano, Moro, y el utopismo de Vasco de Quiroga," Cuadernos Americanos, vol. 68 (March-April, 1953), pp. 155-175.



person free to use his own property as he sees fit. It is a  
false free children. It is a false free children. It is a  
fact that the Indian has no right to own property. It is a  
He had shown this matter to the people of the United States  
of Indian slavery with the assistance of the people of the United States  
his regarding their property. It is a false free children. It is a  
unjust to allow the Indian to be free. It is a false free children. It is a  
owners since it changed the law of the land. It is a false free children. It is a  
chattel slavery.<sup>23</sup>  
that is of greater interest to the people of the United States  
this work gives us of certain information. It is a false free children. It is a  
there was that of Indian's property. It is a false free children. It is a  
as he was writing.<sup>24</sup> It is a false free children. It is a  
Greek author to have been published in the United States. It is a  
Vilassor into Indian work. It is a false free children. It is a  
answer the institution of Indian's property. It is a false free children. It is a  
be an exaggerated view. It is a false free children. It is a  
Age gave through a frame of reference in that of the United States. It is a  
of the Indians, it did not substantially change the law of the land. It is a  
had expressed in his letter of August 1st, 1851. It is a false free children. It is a  
any influence of the Indians on the people of the United States. It is a

---

<sup>23</sup> *Idem*, "Information on Indian Property."  
<sup>24</sup> *Idem*, p. 201.  
<sup>25</sup> *Idem*, "Information on Indian Property," p. 201.  
<sup>26</sup> *Idem*, "Information on Indian Property," p. 201.



pueblos de Santa Fe.

Because of some expressions that Quiroga used in regard to the humble and simple virtues of the Indians, particularly under the influence of the Saturnalia, it has been said that he is a forerunner of the romantic view of the noble savage. Thus, Silvio Zavala lists Quiroga among the Spanish humanists who saw the Noble Savage in the Indians of the New World.<sup>26</sup> This thought, however, can be accepted only with certain definite limitations. Although Quiroga admired the virtues of the humble Indians, he never approached the Rousseauan attitude that the savage is better off than the civilized man. Quiroga could see the faults of the savage as well as his good points. In one place he spoke of the Indians as "a barbarous people who . . . live scattered through the fields like animals without good policía and for this reason they grow up bad, fierce, bestial and cruel, prejudicial, inhuman and ignorant, and tyrannical even among themselves."<sup>27</sup> His constant contention was that only by a well ordered republic and policía could they be saved from their natural vices. So, while Rousseau would maintain that the good savage was ruined by society, Quiroga held that the basically good nature of the savage could be saved from savagery only if he were incorporated into a stable society and shaped by it.

This need for introducing the natives to policía was what centered Quiroga's attention on Thomas More's Utopia. Quiroga had tried to work

---

<sup>26</sup> Silvio Zavala, Sir Thomas More in New Spain (London, 1955), p. 9.

<sup>27</sup> Quiroga, "Información en derecho," p. 308.



because of some experiments that have been made in the  
humble and simple village of the Indians, it has been  
seen of the Indians, it has been seen that the  
transmission of the noble and the noble, the noble  
among the Spanish Americans, the noble and the noble  
the new world. This thought, however, is not the only one  
that definite limitations. It is the only one that  
humble Indians, he never approached the noble and the noble  
savage is better off than the noble and the noble  
fate of the savage as well as the noble and the noble  
of the Indians as a barbarian people, a people without  
the fields like animals without food and without the  
grow up bad, fierce, brutal and cruel, without the noble  
and tyrannical even among the noble and the noble  
that only by a well ordered society, a society that  
their natural voice. It is the only one that  
savage was raised by society, the noble and the noble  
of the savage could be a noble and the noble and the noble  
into a stable society and the noble and the noble  
This need for intervention, the noble and the noble  
García's attention on the noble and the noble and the noble



for several years with the patchwork of laws that had been developed for the Indies. He complained that the complexities of Spanish law were not suited to the mentality of the Indian because in this truly new world matters must be ordained in a new way according to the "quality and condition of the land and the manner, and condition, and good habits, and inclinations, and uses, and customs of the natives," varying the law according to the needs of the various areas, and not acting like an ignorant doctor who prescribes the same remedy for every disease or applies prescriptions as he pulls them blindly from a pitcher.<sup>28</sup> In another place, speaking of Spanish colonial law, he characterized it as

these pieces and patches of laws and ordinances, which in making ordinances never succeed in setting anything sufficiently in order; rather in patching one hole they make a hundred, and in stopping one leak they make four, and because they do not find the road once and become lost, they go around and walk over it many times and never finish walking nor arrive at the inn and repose which they seek; and in cutting off one troublesome thing, seven or a hundred are born, like the heads of Hydra. . . . In such a failure and disorder, I see only one remedy, which is to cease to patch and walk about begging for alms, and to commence, on the royal road and with raised sail, to remake the thing anew.<sup>29</sup>

Previously Quiroga had proposed a method of remaking the whole system of government of the Indians. In his "Información en derecho" he refers to a parecer which he had sent to the Council at an earlier date concerning the ways in which the government of the natives should be reorganized. This parecer has not yet come to light. Zavala thinks that it must have been one that was sent to Spain together with pareceres

---

<sup>28</sup> Ibid., p. 311.

<sup>29</sup> Ibid., p. 371



for several years with the intention of...  
the Indian. He complained that the...  
united to the... of the Indian...  
matters must be ordered in a...  
tion of the last and the...  
institutions, and new, and...  
according to the needs of the...  
important doctor who...  
applies prescriptions as in...  
another place, speaking of...  
these places and...  
ordinances never...  
order; rather in...  
stepping one...  
find the road...  
it many times and...  
and negroes which...  
thing, even to a...  
in such a...  
to cease to...  
manus, on the...  
thing now.

Previously...  
system of government...  
he refers to a...  
date concerning the...  
be reorganized. This...  
that it must have been...

COTTON COTTON

29 Ibid., p. 311.

29 Ibid., p. 311.



of the other oidores and of some friars in November, 1532. These were results of discussions held in Mexico in the summer of 1532 regarding the best way of populating and perpetuating the land.<sup>30</sup> But Quiroga gives us no idea as to the date of the parecer to which he refers in the "Información en derecho," and so it is possible that the parecer of 1532 is not the same. Be that as it may, no such document from Quiroga's hand has been found.

In the course of his "Información," however, he found it necessary to defend the ideas of his parecer and in so doing he gives us a summary of its contents and an explanation of its origin. He had presented a plan for a republic which could be extended to include the whole Indian population of the New World. He explains that his plan had been taken from the form of republic presented in More's work as though from a pattern. He expresses intense admiration for More, whom he considers almost inspired by the Holy Spirit, because he was able to describe the state of the Indians and present a plan of republic so suited to their needs, without ever having seen them.<sup>31</sup>

Quiroga's description of the political structure of his proposed city corresponds closely to that of the Utopia but with a change of titles and certain additional officials to draw the whole framework into the Spanish system.<sup>32</sup> As in Utopia the basic unit would be the familia, or

<sup>30</sup> Silvio Zavala, Ideario de Vasco de Quiroga (México, 1941), pp. 46-48.

<sup>31</sup> Quiroga, "Información en derecho," p. 397.

<sup>32</sup> Ibid., p. 391.



of the other oldest and of some others in the present day. The results of this discussion have been in the nature of a... the best way of population and representing the... gives us no idea as to the date of the passage... information on the subject, and as it is possible that... is not the case. In that case, no such document... hand has been found.

In the course of this... to defend the ideas of his... of its contents and an explanation... plan for a republic which... population of the New World. He explains that... from the form of republic... town. He expressed intense admiration for... inspired by the Holy Spirit, because he was... of the Indians and present a plan of... without ever having seen them.

Quirós's description of the political structure of the... city corresponds closely to that of the... and certain additional details to show the... Spanish system. As in the case of the... the best unit...

---

<sup>30</sup> Silvio Zavala, *Historia de Vasco de Quiroga*, Madrid, 1911, pp. 46-48.

<sup>31</sup> Quirós, "Información en consejo," p. 1.

<sup>32</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 37.



extended family, consisting of ten to sixteen married couples of one lineage. Each familia would have its padre y madre de familia as the responsible authorities within the familia, whom all the members of the familia would respect and obey. The city would be composed of six thousand of these familias and would, therefore, consist of at least sixty thousand vecinos, or adult males.<sup>33</sup> Over every thirty families there would be a jurado as the responsible authority in his juradería or parroquia. This corresponds to the office of syphogrant in the Utopia.<sup>34</sup> Above the jurados would be the regidores, one for every four jurados; Utopia has a tranibore, or philarch, over every ten syphogrants.<sup>35</sup> At the top of the native hierarchy of rulers in Quiroga's city, there would be two alcaldes ordinarios and a tacatecle. The alcaldes ordinarios represented an introduction from Spanish law; the office of tacatecle (a Nahuatl term) was probably the equivalent of the Utopian prince.<sup>36</sup> All of the officials mentioned above were to be Indians, elected according to the method set out in Quiroga's parecer. A Spaniard would serve as alcalde mayor or corregidor over the whole city and receive his position from the Spanish king and the Real Audiencia in the king's name. The supreme authority over the Utopian-style cities should be the audiencia in matters temporal. Quiroga thought that this form of organization would also make for better religious care of the Indians,

---

<sup>33</sup>Cf. More, Utopia (English), p. 86.

<sup>34</sup>Ibid., p. 76.

<sup>35</sup>Ibid.

<sup>36</sup>Ibid.



extended family, comprising two to three generations and  
 lineage. Each family would have two or three sons, and the  
 responsible authorities within the family, as well as the members of the  
 family would respect and care for the city and be engaged in its  
 thousand of these families and would, therefore, be a part of the  
 sixty thousand families, or about 100,000. There would be a family  
 there would be a family as the responsible authority in the family  
 or patriarch. This corresponds to the office of patriarch in the  
 Utopia.<sup>34</sup> Above the patriarch would be the family, and the family  
 patriarch; Utopia has a patriarch, or chief, over every family.  
 At the top of the native hierarchy of affairs in Utopia's city, there  
 would be two officials: the patriarch and the patriarch.  
 represented an introduction from Utopia in; the office of patriarch  
 (a Utopian term) was probably not a part of the Utopian  
 All of the officials mentioned above were to be in the family, and  
 ing to the method set out in Utopia's law book. A family would  
 as the patriarch or the patriarch over the whole city and patriarch  
 position from the patriarch and the patriarch in the city.  
 name. The supreme authority over the city is the patriarch.  
 the patriarch in matters of law. The patriarch is the patriarch  
 organization would also make for other organizations in the city.

33 Or. More, Utopia, p. 74.  
 34 Ibid., p. 74.  
 35 Ibid.  
 36 Ibid.  
 37 Ibid.



since two friars could work more effectively with such a concentrated group than could a hundred among the scattered huts.

To accompany his "Información en derecho" Quiroga sent a Spanish version of a part or a summary (preámbulo y razonamiento) of More's Utopia which he had translated from Latin.<sup>37</sup> This piece, however, is no longer with the "Información" and has not been found. The parecer and the translation of the Utopia must have represented the high point of More's influence on Quiroga. It is unfortunate that both have disappeared.

By the time Quiroga came to write the Ordinances for the pueblo-hospitals of Santa Fe the influence of More had been tempered to some extent by experience, by the introduction of many specifically Christian elements, and by the fact that his towns had never grown to a size which justified the complicated governing body of his parecer. Yet, the influence of the Utopia is still strongly present, as is very evident to anyone who compares the two works carefully. The Ordinances were first published by Don Juan José Moreno in the eighteenth century from an incomplete copy that he found in the archive of the cathedral chapter of Michoacán. The copy was lacking both the beginning and the end.<sup>38</sup> No other copy has ever been found.

As we have them now, the Ordinances originate from sometime between mid-1554 and January 24, 1565. In the course of the Ordinances

<sup>37</sup>"Información en derecho," pp. 396-397.

<sup>38</sup>Aguayo Spencer, Documentos, pp. 247-248.



since two letters could have been sent to the group than could a single letter. It is necessary to have a version of a part of a letter in the original. The letter which he had translated was not longer with the information and was not longer and the translation of the letter was not longer of More's influence on the letter. It is not longer appeared.

By the time the letter was sent to the hospital of Santa Fe the influence on the letter was not longer extent by experience. By the time the letter was sent to the elements, and by the time the letter was sent to the hospital the hospital was not longer. The letter was not longer of the hospital is still longer. The letter was not longer anyone who compares the two letters. The letter was not longer published by Don Juan. The letter was not longer complete copy that he found in the hospital. The letter was not longer. The copy was not longer. The letter was not longer other copy has ever been found.

As we have seen, the letter was not longer between mid-1554 and January 1555. The letter was not longer.

37-Information on the letter, page 15-16.  
38-Information on the letter, page 15-16.



Quiroga referred to the "Doctrina Cristiana" approved by His Holiness the Pope, which he was leaving in print for the instruction of the Indians of Santa Fe. But the printing of this work, done by Quiroga's request in Seville, was completed on October 21, 1553.<sup>39</sup> Further, since Quiroga speaks in the Ordinances of "this hospital and college of Santa Fe of the Province of Mexico" and "that of the Province of Michoacán," he was apparently living in the pueblo near Mexico City at the time of the composition.<sup>40</sup> This would place the date sometime after mid-1554 when he returned from a lengthy sojourn in Spain.<sup>41</sup> The Ordinances were completed before January 24, 1565, since Quiroga mentioned them in his will of that date.<sup>42</sup> Undoubtedly a set of ordinances for the pueblos existed before 1554 and the set that we have now represents Quiroga's final revision. The order and arrangement within the work is poor, with related materials in entirely separate places. It gives the appearance of growth by accretion over the course of time. In presenting the summary which follows, an attempt has been made to draw together those ordinances that are related. Citations for comparison with the Utopia will generally be to the Cambridge University edition of Robynson's translation but, when an actual comparison between the texts is made, it will be between the Spanish text of the Ordinances and the Latin text of the Utopia.

---

<sup>39</sup>Nicolás León, El Libro de Doctrina Christiana (México, 1928), p. 3.

<sup>40</sup>Quiroga, "Ordenanzas," p. 265.

<sup>41</sup>León, Quiroga (México, 1903), p. 54.

<sup>42</sup>Quiroga, "Testamento," p. 286.



Although referred to the "Ordinance" (Ordinance) of the Bishop of Santa Fe, which he was leaving in print for the inspection of the Indians of Santa Fe, but the printing of this work, however, was completed in Seville, was completed on October 14, 1555, since the Bishop speaks in the Ordinance of "this printing" and since Santa Fe of the Province of Mexico, and that of the Province of Mexico, he was apparently living in the middle of the 16th century, the composition.<sup>40</sup> This would place the date of the work when he returned from a lengthy journey in Spain. The Ordinance was completed before January 2, 1555, since the Bishop would not have left will of that date.<sup>41</sup> Undoubtedly a set of Ordinance for the Bishop existed before 1554 and the work was printed in the Bishop's final revision. The order and arrangement of the work is such, that related materials in entirely new and different parts of the work of growth by accretion over the course of time, as in the case of the work, which follows, an attempt has been made to give together those Ordinance that are related. Ordinance for comparison with the work, all may ally be to the Cambridge University edition of the work, but, when an actual comparison between the text is made, it will be between the Spanish text of the Ordinance and the Latin text of the

Utopia.

<sup>39</sup> Alcaldes Regales, II libro de los Indios (Sevilla, 1555).  
<sup>40</sup> Alcaldes Regales, II libro de los Indios (Sevilla, 1555).  
<sup>41</sup> Alcaldes Regales, II libro de los Indios (Sevilla, 1555).  
<sup>42</sup> Alcaldes Regales, II libro de los Indios (Sevilla, 1555).



Political Structure. The basic political unit of the society is to be the familia which is to be composed of members of one lineage in the masculine line, up to ten or twelve couples in each familia.<sup>43</sup> Each familia is subject to its padre de familia. The pueblo is to be governed by a body composed of a principal, regidores and jurados. One principal, or two if necessary, is to be elected by the padres de familia. After attending the Mass of the Holy Spirit, they are to elect him from among four who were chosen from among themselves by the poor of the pueblo, either divided into four groups or acting as a unit. His term of office is to be for three or six years, but he can be re-elected for a longer time. He can be removed and another put in his place with the permission of the rector.<sup>44</sup> The principal is to be a good Christian and a man of exemplary life, meek and not too severe, attracting the love and honor of all but not allowing himself to be despised. His duty is to notify the rector of what goes on and what is necessary in the pueblo.

The regidores, three or four in number, are to be chosen annually by the padres de familia. The office is to be given in turn to all the able married men.<sup>45</sup> Two padres de familia, chosen by the principal and regidores, are to assist at the meetings of the principal and regidores

---

<sup>43</sup>Cf. More, Utopia (English), p. 86. The Utopian family was to consist of not less than ten nor more than sixteen children of fourteen years or older.

<sup>44</sup>Cf. ibid., p. 76. The Utopian prince was elected by the syphogrants for life from among four chosen by the four quarters of the city. He could be deposed for suspicion of tyranny.

<sup>45</sup>The philarchs, or tranibores, of Utopia were elected annually but not changed without reason. Ibid., p. 76.



Political structure. Summary. and of the country

is to be the family which is to be considered as the unit of the family  
in the masculine line, up to the point of the first division.  
Each family is subject to the family law. The law is in effect  
governed by a body composed of a chief, a council, and a judge.  
Principal, or the necessity, is to be elected by the family.  
family. After attending the family, the family, more or less  
his from among four who were chosen from among the family.  
of the family, either directly into the family or acting as a judge.  
term of office is to be for three or six years. Not to be elected  
for a longer time. He can be re-elected and re-elected in his own right.  
the preservation of the family. The obligation is to be a good family man  
and a man of exemplary life, and not a man of bad life, who is not  
and honor of all but not himself. He is to be elected.  
to notify the pastor of what he has done in his family in the family.  
The religious, three or four in number, are to be elected from the  
by the pastor of the family. The office is to be given to him to all the  
able married men.<sup>43</sup> Two judges of family, chosen from the family, are  
religious, are to assist at the meetings of the family and to

<sup>43</sup> Cf. Nov. 1904 (Luzon). The religious and the family  
consist of not less than five men and not more than ten men.  
years or older.

<sup>44</sup> Cf. ibid., p. 10. The religious and the family  
sympathetic for life from when they were a child to the end of their  
city. He could be deposed for religious reasons.

<sup>45</sup> The religious, or religious, of the family, are to be elected  
but not changed without reason. Nov. 1904.



to protect the interests of the poor of the pueblo, and not the same ones every day but by turns.<sup>46</sup> Above this council and vested with the ultimate authority in the pueblo, is the rector. From Quiroga's will we know that this official was to be a priest devoted to the aims of the hospital with an adequate knowledge of the Indian languages of the area, appointed every three years by Quiroga himself or, after his death, by the rector of the College of San Nicolás in Michoacán with the approval of the dean and cabildo of the cathedral of Michoacán.<sup>47</sup>

The meetings of the governing body of the pueblo are to be held every third day, or more often if necessary, in the familia of the principal. They are to discuss matters pertaining to the hospital, estancias, boundaries, and common works in conformity with the Ordinances and in agreement with the rector. Unless a decision is pressing, it is not to be made at the first meeting at which it is discussed but is to be reconsidered at one or two other meetings before being put to a vote.<sup>48</sup> After reaching a decision on anything of importance they are to give a

<sup>46</sup>Cf. *ibid.*, p. 77. Two syphogrants attended the council of the tranibores and the prince, every day a different pair.

<sup>47</sup>Quiroga, "Testamento," p. 280.

<sup>48</sup>Cf. *Utopia* (English), p. 77. Here is an example of close dependence of texts. More: "Tranibori tertio quoque die, interdum si res postulat, saepius in consilium cum principe veniunt . . . Syphograntos semper in senatum duos adsciscunt atque omni die diversos, cautumque ut ne quid ratum sit quod ad rempub[licam] pertineat de quo non tribus in senatu diebus ante agitatum quam decretum sit." *Utopia* (Latin), p. 78. Quiroga: "Se junten cada tercero día, y más días si así necesario fuere, tomando consigo dos de los padres de familias en lugar de jurados . . . y no cada día unos sino interpelados. . . . no lo determinen luego al primer ayuntamiento hasta que en otro o otro dos lo hayan bien entre sí tratado y discutido." Quiroga, "Ordenanzas," pp. 259, 261.







report on it to the rector. The object of delaying the vote was to give time for deliberation and to make sure that no one would become more determined in defending his vote than in looking for the good of the hospital.

Other duties of the governing body are to visit the boundaries of the pueblo once a year and renew the markers if necessary according to the document of the boundaries. They are also to have a chest in which the documents of the pueblo are kept. Complaints of Indians against one another are to be settled amicably before the rector and regidores without recourse to the courts so as to save expenses, avoid imprisonment, and preserve mutual charity.<sup>49</sup>

Another official of the pueblo is the veedor general, or overseer, of the farms. His office puts him in charge of all the farms and ranches. It is his duty to visit the farms regularly and to report on them to the rector, principal and regidores. He is allowed to live in his own familia in the hospital, going out during the day to make his rounds of the farms and ranches.<sup>50</sup>

Social Life. The familia was also the unit upon which the social life of the pueblo was built. Parents are to see to the marriages of their sons with the daughters of other familias of the hospital, or, if they are lacking, with daughters of poor people of the neighborhood.

<sup>49</sup>Cf. More, Utopia (English), p. 77. In Utopia the controversies among the commoners, which were few, were settled before the city council.

<sup>50</sup>In Utopia every thirty farms were subject to one head ruler, called a philarch. Ibid., p. 70.



report on it to the ...  
time for deliberation and ...  
determined in ...  
hospital.

Other ... of the ...  
of the ...  
to the ...  
which the ...  
against ...  
residence without ...  
impairment, and ...  
another official ...  
of the ...  
It is his duty to ...  
rector, principal and ...  
families in the hospital, ...  
of the farm and ...

Social life. The ...  
life of the ...  
their sons with the ...  
if they are ...

49. ...  
various ...  
city ...  
50. In ...  
called a ...



Boys are considered marriageable at fourteen, girls at twelve.<sup>51</sup> They are to be married publicly according to the order of Holy Mother Church and with the consent of their parents and familia. The wives must go to live in the familia of their husbands.<sup>52</sup> Each familia is to have eight, ten, or twelve couples. When a familia becomes overcrowded they are to form a new one.<sup>53</sup>

All the members of a familia are to obey the oldest grandfather of the familia; wives their husbands; children their parents, grandparents, and great-grandparents. This will take away the need for servants, who disturb social tranquility.<sup>54</sup> The padres and madres de familia are to report to the rector and regidores the excesses and disorders of

<sup>51</sup>Here Quiroga makes a considerable departure from the *Utopia*, undoubtedly because of the marriage customs of the Indians. In *Utopia* girls were not to marry before they were eighteen, nor boys before they were twenty-two. *Ibid.*, p. 123. Robynson's translation purged a page and a half of More's original in which he described the carefully supervised physical inspection of the spouses by one another before marriage lest they be deceived by some hidden deformity (More, *Utopia* [Latin], pp. 120-122). Of course, neither this nor the Utopian customs regarding divorce (More, *Utopia* [English], pp. 123-124) found any place in Quiroga's "Ordinances."

<sup>52</sup>"For the women, when they be maryed at a lawefull age, they goo into theire husbandes houses." More, *Utopia* (English), p. 86.

<sup>53</sup>The families in *Utopia* were to have not less than ten nor more than sixteen children over fourteen years of age. The excess from the larger families were put into the smaller ones. *Ibid.*

<sup>54</sup>Here is another close textual dependence. "Antiquissimus (ut dixi) praeest familiae. Ministri sunt uxores maritis et liberi parentibus, atque in summa minores natu maioribus. [And printed in margin] Sic excludi potest otiosa turba ministrorum." More, *Utopia* (Latin), p. 87. "El más antiguo abuelo será él que en ella presida . . . y las mujeres sirvan a sus maridos, y los descendientes a los ascendientes . . . y en fin, los de menos edad y los más mozos, a los más viejos, porque así se puede excusar mucho de criados y criadas y otros servidores. . . ." Quiroga, "Ordenanzas," p. 254.



Boys are considered... are to be married... and with the consent of their parents... to live in the family of their mother... eight, ten, or twelve children... are to form a new one.

All the members of a family are to obey the father... of the family; wives their husbands; children their parents; parents, and great-grandparents... vants, who abstain from sexual intercourse... are to report to the master and mistress the conduct and obedience of

51 Here Quirós makes a declaration... undoubtedly because of the marriage contract of the husband... this were not to say, before they were married... were twenty-two. Ibid., p. 111. Quirós... and a half of More's original is with a... vided physical inspection of the... last they be deceived by some hidden... pp. 120-122). Of course, a sister... divorce (More, Utopia, pp. 127-128)... "Ordinances."

52 For the women, then, they be married at a... go into their husbands' houses.

53 The families in Utopia seem to have... more than sixteen children over fourteen... the larger families were put into the smaller ones.

54 Here is another clause... (ut dixi) present families... parentibus, utque in domo... margin) also exhibit... (Latin), p. 67. "The... y has mothers eleven... dantes... vijos, porque así se... servidores..."



the children as well as their own responsibility or negligence in such matters. If such things happen through the inability or negligence of the padres de familia, others are to be elected with the advice of the rector and regidores.<sup>55</sup>

When the members of a family go to work in the fields, they are to go with the padre de familia, who is to oversee the work and report negligences. The padres themselves are exempted from work but are encouraged to lend a hand for the sake of example, especially at the beginning.<sup>56</sup>

For the sake of recreation one or more of the poor people of the hospital may, with the permission of the rector, principal, and regidores, go to the farms or ranches for a while, where they shall help out if they are well and shall be fed as long as their permission lasts.<sup>57</sup>

In regard to vesture they are to maintain uniformity in so far as possible. The clothing is to be of cotton or wool in their natural color, white, clean and modest, without decoration and other costly and curious work, and they shall be made in the familias. They are to be such as to protect from both cold and heat. The people may have two

<sup>55</sup>In Utopia, when the oldest father became incapacitated by age, he was replaced by the next in age. More, Utopia (English), p. 86.

<sup>56</sup>The syphogrants of Utopia were exempt from work by law, but in order to attract others to work by their example, they did not take advantage of this exemption. Ibid., pp. 82-83.

<sup>57</sup>The Utopians were allowed to go from their own city to visit another, but only with permission of the magistrates. If they stayed longer than a day in any place, they worked at their crafts and were provided with everything they needed. Ibid., pp. 93-94.



the children as well as their own responsibilities in the  
matters. It much things happen through the influence of  
the parties to families, there are to be first of all the  
rector and neighbors.

When the members of a family are in the habit of  
to go with the party to family, which is to be a part of  
negligence. The party themselves the parties to the party  
concerned to find a hand for the party to be in the  
beginning.

For the sake of reputation and of the party people of  
the hospital may, with the party to the party, and  
neighbors, go to the party to be a part of the party  
help out if they are well and if it is to be a part of  
lasts.

In regard to various things and the party to be a part of  
as possible. The of thing is to be a part of the party  
color, white, clean and neat, with the party and other things  
various work, and they shall be to be a part of the party  
such as to protect from each other and the party.

In Utopia, when the party to be a part of the party  
he was replaced by the party to be a part of the party.  
The party to be a part of the party to be a part of the party  
in order to attract attention to the party to be a part of the party  
advantage of this party to be a part of the party.  
The Utopians were to be a part of the party to be a part of the party  
another, but only with the party to be a part of the party  
longer than a day in the party to be a part of the party  
provided with everything they needed.



sets of clothing, one for dress and the other for work. In the winter they are to wear hose and woollen jackets or vests stuffed with cotton or wool. Married women are to wear unadorned white cotton veils (tocas) over their other garments, which shall cover their heads and the rest of their bodies; single girls are not obliged to wear them.<sup>58</sup>

As for instruction, the children are to be taught their ABC's. They are also to be trained in farming, as will be explained further on. But of primary importance is the instruction in Christian and moral doctrine and good customs according to the form of Quiroga's printed Doctrina Christiana. This doctrina was to form them not only in faith but also in general principles of civilized life and was to be considered as supplementary to the Ordinances in ruling their life. Quiroga's aim was to give them *policía* and prudence, destroying what was evil in their native customs but preserving what was good. Those who have been taught in the hospital are to take with them when they leave the hospital "sound and Catholic Christian doctrine and *policía*, and crafts" which they will teach to their neighbors.<sup>59</sup>

Those who are not legitimately impeded are to attend Mass on days when it is celebrated. Quiroga gives a list of special feasts,

<sup>58</sup>The vesture of the Utopians was to be of one style, except for the distinction of man and woman, married and unmarried. Outer clothing was made of wool or linen in their natural color, fit for both winter and summer, each family making its own. For work they wore leather garments. Ibid., pp. 79, 80, 85.

<sup>59</sup>Although the intellectual interests of the citizens of Santa Fe were not expected to be as sophisticated as those of the Utopians, intellectual training was not neglected. The emphasis was on training in Christian doctrine, as that was the purpose for which the pueblos were founded.







apparently made up primarily for Santa Fe de México. They are to celebrate the feast of the Exaltation of the Holy Cross, the day on which the first tall crosses were raised in both hospitals, although in different years. Bishop Zumárraga had granted indulgences for this day for Santa Fe de México. The feast of San Salvador is to be celebrated in the hermitage of that name in the valley near the pueblo, the feast of the Assumption in the principal church which was under that patronage, and the feast of St. Michael and the other angels in the church of St. Michael to be built above the valley in a place set aside for it.

On the principal feasts all the members of the pueblo are to gather for common meals in a large hall built for this purpose. This meal shall be at the expense of the commune. Each familia shall take its turn in preparing one of these meals, which shall not be of strange or skimpy foods but shall be abundant and cheerful.<sup>60</sup>

Quiroga adds some admonitions as to personal habits. The people of the pueblos are to strive for cleanliness of both soul and body, so that the cleanliness of the soul appears outwardly in the body. They are not to paint their faces or bodies except for necessary or useful medicine. They are also exhorted not to make fun of anyone because of poverty, natural defects, or other causes.<sup>61</sup>

---

<sup>60</sup>This is a considerable departure from the Utopia, where meals in common were considered the usual thing. More, Utopia, pp. 89-90. It shows on Quiroga's part a greater respect for the individual family.

<sup>61</sup>In Utopia to mock a man for a deformity was considered a reproach not to him who was mocked but to him who mocked. Ibid., p. 125.



apparently made by passing the light of the sun through the  
prisms the least of the light is on the right hand, the right hand  
the first fall comes to rest in the middle, and the middle  
first part. Bishop Shannon has written many books on the  
for Santa Fe de Mexico. The light of the sun is a very important  
in the history of that nation. The light of the sun is a very important  
the Assumption in the Virgin Mary. The light of the sun is a very important  
and the feast of St. Michael the Archangel. The light of the sun is a very important  
Michael to be built above the altar in a place where the sun is  
in the religious history of the world. The light of the sun is a very important  
father for common sense in a religious world. The light of the sun is a very important  
meal shall be at the expense of the common sense. The light of the sun is a very important  
its turn in preparing an old world. The light of the sun is a very important  
or strong foods but shall be common sense. The light of the sun is a very important  
Gethsemane adds some substance to the common sense. The light of the sun is a very important  
of the question are to study for themselves. The light of the sun is a very important  
that the cleanliness of the world is a very important. The light of the sun is a very important  
are not to point their finger at the common sense. The light of the sun is a very important  
medicine. They are also wanted to be common sense. The light of the sun is a very important  
poverty, natural defects, or other things.

---

60 This is a common sense. The light of the sun is a very important  
in common were considered the common sense. The light of the sun is a very important  
It shows on Gethsemane's part a great respect for the common sense. The light of the sun is a very important  
117.

61 On Gethsemane to work a man for a common sense. The light of the sun is a very important  
reproach not to him who was needed for the common sense. The light of the sun is a very important  
p. 127.



The Work of the Pueblo. The work of the pueblo is to be done willingly and without complaint, for the benefit of the hospital and its hospitality. It is to be regarded as a means of learning *policia* and *prudencia*. Six hours each day are to be employed in works for the common good,<sup>62</sup> the fruits of which are to be distributed equitably according to need. The excess, after the needy of the hospital are cared for, is to be employed in pious works and for the benefits of other needy people.

There are two main types of work: mechanical and agricultural. Mechanical work includes such occupations as weaving, stonecutting, carpentry, masonry, and blacksmithing. The artisans who are trained in these crafts are to make all necessary repairs on the buildings during the six hours of common labor. The buildings are to be repaired as soon as they show signs of damage before the harm becomes serious. Girls are to be taught womanly arts at home, such as the working of wool, linen, silk, and cotton.<sup>63</sup>

Agriculture is to be the principal occupation of the pueblo and the common work of all the members. Six hours a day were to be devoted to work in the common fields but at times it might be considered better to work from sunrise to sunset two or three days a week according

<sup>62</sup>The Utopian workday consisted of six hours, three before dinner and three after dinner. More, *Utopia* (Latin), p. 79. Robynson's translation is defective here. More, *Utopia* (English), p. 80.

<sup>63</sup>Husbandry and crafts were the main occupations in Utopia. The principal crafts were cloth-working, masonry, blacksmithing, and carpentry. More, *Utopia* (English), p. 78. Buildings were quickly repaired and damages prevented. *Ibid.*, p. 84. Women did light work such as work in wool and flax. *Ibid.*, p. 79.



The Work of the People

voluntarily and without constraint, for the benefit of the people and  
 the happiness. It is to be regarded as a duty of the people to  
 and industriously. Six hours work day and six hours work for the  
 common good, the interest of which are to be maintained in a  
 ing to need. The excess, the surplus of the people's work  
 is to be employed in the service of the people and for the  
 people.

There are two main types of work: mechanical and intellectual.

Mechanical work includes work done with the hands, with  
 carpentry, masonry, and blacksmithing. The intellectual work is done  
 these crafts are to make all the necessary things for the people and  
 the six hours of work day. The intellectual work is to be regarded as  
 soon as they show signs of change. These two types of work are  
 are to be taught to the people, and as the people of the world, the  
 silk, and cotton.

Education is to be the principal concern of the people

and the common work of all the people. The people are to be  
 devoted to work in the common interest of the people and to be  
 better to work from learning to master the art of the people.

The people are to be taught to work with the hands and with the mind.

and three other things. The people are to be taught to work with the  
 translation is to be the principal concern of the people.

The people are to be taught to work with the hands and with the mind.

The principal crafts of the people are to be taught to the people, and  
 carpentry, masonry, blacksmithing, and the intellectual work. The people  
 and the people are to be taught to work with the hands and with the mind.



to the demands of the season.<sup>64</sup> Children are to be taught farming with their ABC's. Twice weekly after the time of classes they are to be taken into a field near the school and instructed in agriculture for an hour or two after the fashion of a game or a pastime. What they raise is to be distributed among them according to the quality of their work.<sup>65</sup>

Individuals can have the usufruct of orchards and pieces of land for recreation and subsidiary income,<sup>66</sup> but only for as long as they live in the pueblo. In case of death or long absence from the pueblo without permission, the usufruct passes on to the children or grandchildren or to the most deserving members of the pueblo who do not have land. The immovable goods of the hospital are inalienable.

The farms and ranches are to be staffed from the urban families, with four to six married couples in each, chosen by the principal and regidores. They are to be changed every two years but if anyone wishes to stay longer he may do so, provided he has the express permission of the rector and regidores. The oldest in each group is to be in charge and the others are to obey him. When the farm families are changed, the most capable or the oldest is to remain as principal to oversee the work

<sup>64</sup>Agriculture was a science common to all Utopians. Ibid., p. 78. To this work, as to others, the six-hour day applied.

<sup>65</sup>Utopian children were instructed in agriculture from their youth, partly in schools, partly in the country near the city, "brought up as it were in playinge." Ibid., p. 78.

<sup>66</sup>On the back side of the houses in the Utopian cities were large gardens in which they took great pride and pleasure. Ibid., pp. 74-75.







of the new arrivals and the whole familia is to obey him.<sup>67</sup> Slack seasons in farm work are to be filled in by supplementary work, such as cutting and shaping of stone and timber and collecting of wild products.

They are to raise a full list of farm products--fowl, both Spanish and native; sheep, goats, cows, pigs, and draught animals, with preference for oxen; produce of orchards and gardens, and field crops. They are to plant twice as much as is considered necessary for the pueblo, or at least one-third more than necessary. The surplus is not to be disposed of until they are certain that there will be no shortage for the coming year. Then it can be replaced by the new crop. There shall be adequate places for the storage of the produce and from there it shall be distributed to each and all according to need.<sup>68</sup> In each familia there is also to be some place to store what is distributed.

The income from the sale of produce and from other sources is to be kept in a large chest with three keys which are to be kept by the

<sup>67</sup>The Utopian farms were staffed from the cities, each having not less than forty workers, men and women, under the direction of a grave and elderly father and mother of the family. Twenty people were exchanged between the farms and the city each year, so that those who were sent to the farms remained there two years and only half the staff was changed at once. Those who wished could obtain permission to stay longer. Ibid., p. 70.

<sup>68</sup>In Utopia, the farmers planted more crops and raised more animals than necessary. Ibid., p. 71. They did not consider their store sufficient until they had provided for two years following. Ibid., p. 95. They had four centers in each city where food and other necessities were stored and distributed. Ibid., pp. 87-88.



of the new arrivals and the whole family in a small house  
persons in fact work are to be killed in a few days  
as cutting and shipping of the new family in fact work  
Grote.

They are to raise a bill for the family in fact work  
Spanish and native; sheep, horses, cows, and other animals  
preference for men; and the family in fact work  
They are to plant trees in the family in fact work  
people, or at least one - this new family in fact work  
to be disposed of until they are certain that they are no longer  
for the coming year. Then they are to plant trees  
shall be adapted places for the family in fact work  
it shall be distributed to the family in fact work  
families there is also to be some place to which they are distributed  
The income from the sale of produce and other goods is  
to be kept in a large house in the family in fact work

67 The Utroba family were started from the city, and living  
not less than forty workers, men and women, under the direction of a  
grave and elderly father and mother of the family. The family were  
exchanged between the family and the city of the family. The family  
were sent to the family residence where they were to live. The family  
was changed at once. The family were to be in the family in fact work  
larger. Ibid., p. 70.

68 In Utroba, the family planned to move to a new place  
animals than necessary. Ibid., p. 71. The family did not consider  
store sufficient until they had provided for the family in fact work  
Ibid., p. 95. They had four animals in each of the family in fact work  
necessities were stored and distributed. Ibid., p. 95.



rector, the principal, and the oldest of the regidores.<sup>69</sup> In this box are also to be kept the account books, which are to be given annually to the rector, regidores, patron, and protectors of the hospital, and to Quiroga until his death.

The Infirmary. An infirmary is to be built on the plan of a large familia, square, twice as large as the others and a little separate from them. On one side there is to be a large hall for those sick with contagious diseases and opposite it another hall for those with non-contagious ailments.<sup>70</sup> The other two halls at the front and back of the familia shall be for the mayordomo and dispensero of the sick and for the necessary offices. In the middle of the patio there is to be a covered chapel with open sides where Mass can be said and the sick can attend.

The mayordomo and dispensero are to give of the best and first things of the hospital to the sick when they make a request, and what they do not have they shall buy. A druggist, physician, and surgeon shall be hired to visit and care for the sick.<sup>71</sup> The healthy shall visit the sick, guarding themselves against contagion, but consoling

<sup>69</sup>The Utopians sold surplus produce and obtained whatever they lacked in their own land. They kept the records of debts in a common box. Treasures were reserved for times of unexpected need and danger. Ibid., pp. 95-96.

<sup>70</sup>The Utopian city had four hospitals roundabout, with ample space in each so that the sick were not crowded and so that those suffering from contagious diseases could be kept far apart from the others. Ibid., p. 89.

<sup>71</sup>In the distribution of food in Utopia, first consideration was to be had for the sick. They were supplied with everything necessary, and physicians were continually present. Ibid.







the sick and showing them the greatest possible charity and interest.

Expulsion from the Pueblo. A member may be expelled from the hospital for any of the following causes: doing a hideous thing or causing bad example, unruliness, living scandalously, being a bad Christian, drunkenness, excessive laziness, consistent violation of the ordinances, acting against the common good of the hospital. Such a person is to be expelled and is to restore what he has profited from his stay. This ordinance shall be executed by the principal and regidores, having consulted the rector.<sup>72</sup>

Having now studied the background and ordinances of the pueblo-hospitals of Santa Fe, we will turn our attention to their history and development.

---

<sup>72</sup>Crimes in Utopia were punished by death, banishment, or bondage. Ibid., pp. 77, 124, 146. The pueblos de Santa Fe had no authority to punish except by exclusion from membership.







## CHAPTER IV

### THE FOUNDING OF SANTA FE DE MÉXICO

We have seen that when Quiroga wrote his letter to the Council of the Indies on August 14, 1531, he was deeply concerned about the need to do something for the children who had been raised in the friaries and for the orphaned waifs who wandered about the marketplaces. He proposed to the crown that special towns be founded in which they could establish their homes under the watchful care of a few friars.<sup>1</sup> This idea was the seed from which the pueblo-hospitals of Santa Fe sprang.

The crown replied to a letter of the audiencia of Mexico on March 20, 1532. The reply stated that four paragraphs of the letter had been devoted to the scattered and disordered way in which the Indians lived, which made it very difficult to check their paganism and to train them in Christianity. The audiencia had presented both the advantages and problems that would result from uniting the Indians into larger communities. To the authorities in Spain it seemed that any sudden change in this matter might create difficulties at first, but it allowed the audiencia to make the final decision. In any case, the first efforts in this direction were to be made little by little as an experiment and not all at once. It was recommended that the children who had been brought up in the friaries be put in towns with the Spaniards so that

---

<sup>1</sup>Quiroga al Consejo, México, 14 de agosto, 1531, DII, XIII, 421-424, 429.

*Collection de documents relatifs à la découverte  
et à l'organisation de la région mexicaine  
de l'Amérique du Nord. 42 Vol. Madrid  
1862-1863*







they could be drawn into the Spanish way of life.<sup>2</sup>

Quiroga must have found this a somewhat cool reception to his enthusiastic proposal, but it did give him a green light to proceed with an experiment. He leaped into the task as soon as he had received this somewhat grudging permission. The letter from the crown, which was dated March 20, 1532, could not have reached Mexico before sometime in the summer of that year. On August 30 Quiroga closed the deal on his first purchase of land for his pueblo-hospital. The bill of sale reads in part as follows:

Let all who shall see this letter know that I, Pedro de Meneses, who am a citizen of this great city of Tenuxtitlan México of this New Spain, of my free and good will do declare and acknowledge that I sell to you, Señor Licenciado Vasco de Quiroga, oidor of this royal audiencia which resides in this city of Mexico, namely, two parts of an estancia which is called Almeluya which is within the bounds of this city, which on the one side borders upon lands of Tlacoayaca and on the other side lands of Tacuba. The one part I had from García Holguín. The said two parts I sell to you in order to enlarge the pueblo and hospital of Santa Fe and for the support and lodging of poor Indians . . . for the price and amount of seventy pesos of the gold which is current at the present in this said city, smelted and marked at the value of four hundred and fifty maravedís per peso. . . .<sup>3</sup>

Later the same year Quiroga bought the third part of an estancia from Alonso Dávila, scribe of the smelting-house and citizen of Mexico City. The description of this piece of property reads:

one third part of an estancia which is called Acasuchil which is in the bounds of Cuyuacán, the other two parts of which belong to you, the said Señor Licenciado Vasco de Quiroga, which borders on the one side on a large orchard and on the other side on lands of the Marqués del Valle. . . .

---

<sup>2</sup>Puga, I, 263-264, 273.

<sup>3</sup>Quiroga vs. Martín Cortés, ff. 201v-204.







Quiroga made the purchase from Dávila on September 9, 1532, for 40 pesos of gold, again valued at 450 maravedís per peso.<sup>4</sup> Although the description of this piece of property differs considerably from that purchased from Pedro de Meneses, it seems to have been the rest of the same piece. Not only does the bill of sale refer to the two other parts belonging to Quiroga, but summary of the bill of sale, presented by Quiroga for his residencia in 1536, speaks of the other two parts as having belonged to Pedro de Meneses.<sup>5</sup>

Over the course of the next several years Quiroga continued to expand the holdings of Santa Fe. On February 15, 1534, Quiroga paid 90 pesos of gold (450 mrs. per peso) to Juan de Fuentes for "an estancia, house, and lands with everything that is in it and belongs to it . . . which said estancia is within the bounds of this city of Mexico near Tacubaya above the estancia of the Factor, Gonzalo de Salazar. . . ."<sup>6</sup>

A conflict over land rights must have arisen between the Indians of Santa Fe and those of Tacuba, for on April 26, 1534, in a country place called Quamulco near Chapultepec, Quiroga met with the leaders of Tacuba to settle certain differences. It was decided that a road on which they met, which began on the east at Chapultepec and ran west to a barranca and passed between some maguey patches near some houses, should be the dividing line between lands worked by the Indians of Santa Fe and those cultivated by natives of Tacuba. Whoever would plow and sow

---

<sup>4</sup>Ibid., ff. 272v-276.

<sup>5</sup>RSA, f. 71.

<sup>6</sup>Quiroga vs. Martín Cortés, ff. 279-283.







in the land designated for the other group would lose the produce of his work and those in whose area it fell would enjoy the fruits of the same.<sup>7</sup>

Quiroga made a second purchase of land from Alonso Dávila on July 12, 1534. This piece was an estancia "in the area called Acasuchil which on the one side borders on lands of the natives of the pueblos of Cuyucán, and on the other side on the royal road that goes to the new pueblo of Santa Fe, and along the back, on the land of the said Santa Fe. . . ." Dávila sold the estancia with some houses which he had on it and with all its Castillian and native trees to Quiroga for 70 gold pesos.<sup>8</sup>

Juan de Burgos sold Quiroga a piece of land for 30 pesos on October 2, 1534. Burgos had developed this land to some extent, as is evident from the bill of sale:

I sell to you, Señor Licenciado Vasco de Quiroga, . . . a piece of cultivated land of orchards and grain fields and trees and plants of Castile and a dove-cot, which is in Acasuchil in the bounds of this city . . . which has as boundaries on the one side the cultivated land of the Factor, Gonzalo de Salazar, in the valley on the lower watershed of the same valley; [I sell this land] with all that you can settle and make use of up the same valley; and I sell you the said cultivated land in order to expand and enlarge the pueblo and hospital of Santa Fe for the support and lodging of poor Indians. . . .<sup>9</sup>

In 1535 Quiroga added two more estancias to the holdings of his pueblo-hospital. For the price of 130 pesos he purchased from Alonso de Paredes on November 10, 1535, "two estancias of land which are in the

<sup>7</sup>Ibid., ff. 300-301.

<sup>8</sup>Ibid., ff. 290-292v.

<sup>9</sup>Ibid., ff. 262-265.



in the land designated for the purpose of the  
work and those in whose interest the work was  
done. The work was done in the year 1934.  
July 12, 1934. This was the first time that the  
which on the one side borders on the land of the  
Gyves, and on the other side on the land of the  
people of Gyves, and which was done in the year  
1934. The work was done in the year 1934 and on the  
and with all its facilities and native river to the  
year 1934.

8  
page.

Then the work was done in the year 1934 and on the  
October 2, 1934. The work was done in the year 1934 and on the  
evident from the fact of the work.

I tell you, the work was done in the year 1934 and on the  
of cultivated land of the year 1934 and on the  
plants of the year 1934 and on the  
lands of the year 1934 and on the  
side the cultivated land of the year 1934 and on the  
the valley on the left side of the year 1934 and on the  
this land with all its facilities and native river to the  
name valley; and I tell you the work was done in the year 1934 and on the  
expand and enlarge the work in the year 1934 and on the  
support and lodging of the year 1934 and on the

In 1934 the work was done in the year 1934 and on the  
public-hospital. For the year 1934 the work was done in the year 1934 and on the  
Pruden on November 10, 1934. The work was done in the year 1934 and on the

1934, 1934-1934.

1934, 1934-1934.

1934, 1934-1934.



bounds of this city . . . which are on the road from the estancia of the Factor, which border on lands of Nuño de Guzmán. . . ."10

The final purchase of land by Quiroga for which we have the bill of sale was made on July 28, 1536. On that date he bought from Diego Muñoz and his wife Pascuala Jiménez "an estancia which is called Acasuche, which is in the bounds of Tacubaya, which on one side borders on lands of Tacubaya, for the price of seventy pesos. . . ."11

At some time during this period Quiroga had also purchased an island named Tultepec from the Indians of Ocoyoacac. On March 1, 1536, the cacique of Ocoyoacac brought a complaint concerning this purchase as part of Quiroga's residencia.<sup>12</sup> But an item among the expenses which Quiroga underwent in founding Santa Fe indicates that he paid the Indians of Capulhuac forty blankets for the islet.<sup>13</sup> The island was located in Matalcingo along the side of the river.<sup>14</sup>

There is no indication that Quiroga made any further purchases of land for the pueblo de Santa Fe de México. His lawsuit with the second Marqués del Valle, in which he presented his documents of ownership, occurred during the last two years of his life (1563-1565) and he undoubtedly presented all the documents he had. The sum of his expenditures

<sup>10</sup>Ibid., ff. 305-308.

<sup>11</sup>Ibid., ff. 322v-326.

<sup>12</sup>Ibid., ff. 96-100v, 199. Printed in Aguayo Spencer, pp. 455-460, from a different manuscript copy.

<sup>13</sup>RSA, f. 452.

<sup>14</sup>Quiroga vs. Infante, 1540, f. 924v.



of said city, which was on the 1st of January 1850.  
 The factor, which border on the 1st of January 1850.  
 The line of purchase of 1850 was made on the 1st of January 1850.  
 of said city, which was on the 1st of January 1850.  
 which is in the hands of the factor, which was on the 1st of January 1850.  
 of the factor, for the year of 1850, which was on the 1st of January 1850.  
 At some time during the year of 1850, which was on the 1st of January 1850.  
 island named the factor, which was on the 1st of January 1850.  
 the factor of the factor, which was on the 1st of January 1850.  
 as part of the factor, which was on the 1st of January 1850.  
 factor entered in the factor, which was on the 1st of January 1850.  
 of the factor, which was on the 1st of January 1850.  
 in the factor, which was on the 1st of January 1850.  
 There is no factor, which was on the 1st of January 1850.  
 of land for the factor, which was on the 1st of January 1850.  
 second factor, which was on the 1st of January 1850.  
 ship, occurred during the factor, which was on the 1st of January 1850.  
 undoubtedly presented all the factor, which was on the 1st of January 1850.

MILLERS FALLS

1850-1851

1851-1852

10. 1852, 1853-1854.
11. 1854, 1855-1856.
12. 1856, 1857-1858.
13. 1858, 1859-1860.
14. 1860, 1861-1862.



for land comes to an even 500 pesos, plus the forty blankets expended for the island of Tultepec. Unfortunately the documents give us no idea at all of the size of these pieces of land.

One final piece of land came to Santa Fe de México, not by purchase but by royal benevolence. A royal cedula to Don Antonio de Mendoza, made out in Madrid on November 13, 1535, stated that Licenciado Quiroga had informed the crown of the two pueblos and hospitals that he had founded for poor Christian Indians and of their need to have land to work. He had claimed that there were certain unused lands near the pueblos which would suit their needs. Mendoza was instructed to look into the question and, if there were really unoccupied lands which could be given to the pueblos without prejudice to a third party, he was to provide them with the part that seemed right to him and to send the Council a report on what he did and his opinion of the pueblos.

Mendoza committed the question of the lands to Licenciado Francisco de Loaysa, oidor of the audiencia, and Martín de Peralta, who went to Santa Fe de México to see what unoccupied lands could be given over to the use of the pueblo. They were accompanied by Pero Rodríguez Parrón, measurer. They marked off what appears to have been a fairly large tract of land which joined the lands of the pueblo and appeared suitable for its needs. The rather lengthy description of the land will be given here in Spanish since it is very cumbersome in English:

. . . las [tierras] que al dicho hospital se podían dar . . . eran las que de yuso señalaron y amojonaron que son desde los árboles que están junto a sementera del dicho hospital que va a dar a la rambla de la estancia de Juan de Burgos que es ahora del dicho pueblo y hospital que alinda con estancia del factor atravesando hacia el norte otra rambla derecho a dar a otros







dos árboles que están orilla de otro maizal sementera de los indios del dicho hospital cerca de una palma grande; y de allí a dar al senderillo que va de Chapultepec y de allí por el mismo sendero hacia poniente a dar en la rambla y de allí por la rambla arriba a dar a la hendariza del paso estrecho; y de allí atravesando por el robledal por otra rambla orilla de ella a dar al camino que pasa por Guajimalpa a Tacuba, lo que al presente no estuviere por otros rompido de lo baldío y aquí acaba por esta parte del monte; y después iendo por el dicho camino de Tacuba a dar en el dicho camino real se toma y vuelve el límite abajo del cu de la una parte y otra del dicho camino real que va de México a Guajimalpa entre las dos ramblas que van de la una y de la otra parte del dicho camino real, donde tienen los indios del dicho hospital sus sementeras, a dar hacia la parte de Coyoacán a sementeras de indios sujetos a Coyoacán de esa parte de los cipreses donde era cu que están junto al sendero y camino que se aparta del dicho camino real y va a Coyoacán; y de allí tomando la rambla abajo por las aguas vertientes de ella por cima de la palmilla que está a medio de la cuesta derecho a dar a Capula donde labran los indios de Santa Fe; y de allí atravesando el valle hacia el norte a dar por la otra palmilla que está cabe el camino real que es mojon de la sementera del dicho hospital que se dice Acutitlan que va a dar a la otra rambla de la otra parte del camino donde están unos árboles que se dicen Tepeolulco y Axalco donde labran los dichos indios de Santa Fe. . . .<sup>15</sup>

Viceroy Mendoza, after seeing the description of the lands, granted them to the Indians of Santa Fe on August 31, 1537, with the insistence that they were to be used for cultivation. On November 22, 1537, Andrés Juárez, alguacil mayor of the audiencia, in the presence of several witnesses, officially gave possession of the land to Don Carlos, governor, Juan, regidor, and other Indian officials of Santa Fe in the name of the pueblo.<sup>16</sup> With this the accumulation of land for

---

<sup>15</sup> Having read four copies of this grant, each with notable differences in wording, I have tried to combine them here to get what seems to me to be the best reading. The sources used were the printed copy in León, Documentos, pp. 1-5 (based on a manuscript copy in AGI, Justicia, leg. 204, No. 3, ramo 3), and three manuscript copies in Quiroga vs. Martín Cortés, ff. 5-7v, 15-18, 318-321.

<sup>16</sup> Quiroga vs. Martín Cortés, ff. 16-18; León, Documentos, pp. 3-5.







the pueblo was complete.

In the meantime, while Quiroga had been building up the landholdings of the pueblo, he had also been developing the physical plant. A short item in a letter of the audiencia to the Empress, dated November 3, 1532, made it known that the pueblos which the crown had commanded to be set up with the boys who were taught in the monasteries had begun to be organized with all necessary caution, a matter which was considered profitable and important for the service of God and crown as well as for the security and increase of the land.<sup>17</sup> The formal ceremony of founding must have taken place on September 14, 1532, since Quiroga states in the Ordinances that the first tall crosses were erected in each pueblo de Santa Fe on the feast of the Exaltation of the Holy Cross, although in different years.<sup>18</sup>

The best description of the construction of Santa Fe de México is that given by Don Juan, governor of Santiago Tlaltelolco, on March 14, 1536, as part of Quiroga's residencia. He said that more than two years previously Quiroga had asked him and Don Pablo, governor of the Indian barrio of México, as well as other principales, to build him a thatch house in Guajimalpa, which is above Santa Fe, and they said they would be glad to do it. Quiroga told them that this house was not to be for him but for God and to shelter the poor. They sent principales and skilled workers with Quiroga to see where he wanted them to build the

---

<sup>17</sup>La audiencia de México a la emperatriz, México, 3 de noviembre, 1532, ENE, II, 218.

<sup>18</sup>Quiroga, "Ordenanzas," pp. 263-264.







house and they built him there a modest building covered with thatch. Don Juan did not know if anyone ever lived in this house, but after a few days Quiroga came back to talk to them and said that lower down toward Mexico City in a place called Acasuchil, which is now called Santa Fe, he would like the Indians from the barrio of México to build him one house and those from Santiago another. They each built him a house which he called a familia, with a small patio surrounded by little houses and with only one door by which to enter and leave, after the fashion of corrals. After they had built these familias, Quiroga again called them and asked them to build two more houses like the previous ones but larger. Again they complied with his request, this time building familias with fifteen little houses each, whereas the earlier ones contained only about ten apiece. The common people had carried building materials, such as stone, some wood, adobes, and lime two leagues from México to Santa Fe on their backs.

Later Quiroga asked them to make him a large kitchen to prepare meals for those who might pass along that way and take shelter there. For this they carried some materials from the city, except for the wood which they cut from the mountain a little distance beyond Santa Fe. Afterwards he asked them to build him a church, since it was all for the service of God and their own good. This they built beside a good and pleasant spring, and next to the church they made four cells for friars. Then the licenciado asked them to make a church further up beside the familias so that those who took refuge there could hear Mass. In that place there was the beginning of a house which they repaired and finished



house and they built the house a hundred miles from the city to look  
for them but did not know if anyone was living in this house. One day  
a few days before came a letter to the house and it was written  
toward Mexico City in a place called A. Mexico, which is now called  
Santa Fe, he would like the Indians from the house of A. Mexico to look  
him one house and there were some Indians in the house. One day  
house which he called a house. In a small house a woman was living  
houses and with only one door of which he called a house. After the  
fashion of course. After that he built some houses. One day  
called them and asked them to build the house like the previous  
ones but larger. Again they completed with the house. This house  
ing families with fifteen little houses each. In each of the houses  
contained only about ten people. The women people had carried with  
ing materials, such as stone, wood, and iron. The house  
from Mexico to Santa Fe on their hands.  
Later Quirós asked them to build a house for the Indians to live  
nails for those who might have some nails. One day  
for this they carried some materials from the city and the house  
which they cut from the mountain a little of stone and wood.  
Afterwards he asked them to build the house. The house was built  
service of God and their own good. The house was built and  
pleasant spring, and near to the house, there was a little for the  
Then the Indians who asked them to build a house for the Indians  
families so that those who took refuge there could live. In that  
place there was the beginning of a house. When they returned, and I think



and made into a church. Next to it they built a refectory. The Indians of Texcoco, Otumba, and Tepeapulco also built a familia there like the first ones the others had made.<sup>19</sup>

This work of construction must have begun very soon after Quiroga bought his first piece of land in August 1532. A certification by Pedro García, interpreter, states that on October 9, 1532, Quiroga paid the Indians of Xalatlaco and Atlapulco four bundles of cloth and one blanket from Cuernavaca for making doors, covering rooms, and for other things they had done for Santa Fe. This indicates that some of the buildings were under roof already in October 1532. Since these first buildings were of thatch, it probably did not take very long to put them up. In regard to the four familias, construction on them must have started before August 8, 1533, because on that date Bishop Sebastián Ramírez de Fuenleal, president of the audiencia, mentioned in a letter to the crown that he had asked the Indians of the city to build four houses for Santa Fe.<sup>20</sup> Don Juan also mentioned this request in his testimony.<sup>21</sup>

It is impossible to give any accurate estimate of how much this construction cost Quiroga, since all the statements we have are given in terms of blankets, or mantas. For the building of the four familias he gave Don Juan six bundles, or 120 mantas, for the Indians of Santiago,

<sup>19</sup>RSA, ff. 194v-196.

<sup>20</sup>El presidente de la audiencia de México a su Majestad, México, 8 de agosto, 1533, AGI, México, leg. 68, ramo 1; ENE, III, 118.

<sup>21</sup>RSA, f. 196v.



and made into a church. They were the first of the  
of Mexico, and the first of the first of the first  
first came the other side of the river.  
This work of organization was done by the first of the first  
bought his first piece of land in 1811. He was the first  
Padre Garcia, Interceptor, who was the first of the first  
the Indians of Xalisco and the first of the first of the first  
blame for the Guernsey for the first of the first of the first  
things they had done for the first of the first of the first  
buildings were under foot already in 1811. The first of the first  
buildings were of that, it was the first of the first of the first  
up. In regard to the first of the first of the first of the first  
started before August 8, 1811, because on that day the first of the first  
Padre de Pineda, president of the first of the first of the first  
to the crown that he had been the first of the first of the first  
house for Santa Fe. 20 Don Garcia was the first of the first of the first

testimony. 21

It is impossible to give a correct account of the first of the first  
organization of the first of the first of the first of the first  
in terms of the first of the first of the first of the first  
he gave Don Juan six hundred, or 1000, for the first of the first of the first

1811, 11. 1811-1812.

20 presidente de la república. 1811-1812. 1811-1812. 1811-1812.

21 1811, 1. 1811.



and gave Don Pablo an equal number for those of the barrio of México. He paid the principales of Texcoco eighty-four mantas for the familia which they built.<sup>22</sup>

He also paid a considerable amount for building materials. Over and above the two hundred fanegas of lime which were donated for the work by Bishop Fuenleal, Quiroga paid out 141 mantas and later seven pesos for lime. He also expended twenty-three mantas for wood and thirty-four for bricks.<sup>23</sup>

In building his church, Quiroga did not neglect art, and for this he drew upon native materials and talent. On October 10, 1532, he paid fourteen mantas to the Indian painters of the parish of Santiago for painting large mantas for the hospital. No indication is given as to the subject of these paintings.<sup>24</sup> At another time he paid eleven mantas to a group called "las amantecas pinteros [sic] de México" for painting three retablos--one of a large cross, another of Jesus carrying the cross, and a third of the seven sacraments. He had also given them six mantas for the colors, plus the canvases for the two small retablos.<sup>25</sup> Another seven mantas were given to painters for painting the pillars of Santa Fe and eighty mantas were paid to Don Juan for a cross of rich plumage for Santa Fe.<sup>26</sup> This last item must have been a very beautiful

<sup>22</sup> Ibid., ff. 196v, 452.

<sup>23</sup> Ibid., ff. 287, 451y, 452y.

<sup>24</sup> Ibid., f. 73.

<sup>25</sup> Ibid., ff. 73-73y.

<sup>26</sup> Ibid., f. 451y.







piece of work.

As he was building, Quiroga was also having the farm land prepared and putting in the first crops for his pueblo. In order to use his island of Tultepec, he first had to have a causeway and bridge built, for which he paid the Indians of Capulhuac thirty mantas. Then, in order to have the island plowed and worked the first time, he had to pay the Indians of Capulhuac, Toluca, Metepec, and Teutenango another seventy mantas. For the sowing of the crop, he paid out eighteen more mantas. He also hired extra help for working the lands of Santa Fe itself for the price of fifty-three mantas.<sup>27</sup>

It is unfortunate that we do not have a more accurate idea of the value of mantas in terms of Spanish money. Quiroga, in a statement in his residencia, presented April 11, 1536, assures us that they were "mantas of Cuernavaca, which are very good."<sup>28</sup> In the same statement Quiroga estimates his total expenditure in Santa Fe at 6,000 or 7,000 pesos.<sup>29</sup> This was quite a large expenditure over the course of four years for a man whose salary was less than 1,700 pesos a year (i.e., evaluating his salary in gold pesos of 450 maravedís). Many witnesses for the descargos of his residencia agreed with his statement that he had spent on his pueblos of Santa Fe whatever he was able to save or had previously saved out of his salary, taking for himself only his ordinary

<sup>27</sup> Ibid., ff. 451v-452.

<sup>28</sup> Ibid., f. 62.

<sup>29</sup> Ibid., f. 61.



piece of work.

as he was building, and he was at a time when the

ground and putting in the first stone for his house. In order to

his island of Tuitapac, he first had to have a canoe and

while, for which he paid the Indians of Tuitapac

in order to have the Indians build and worked the first

pay the Indians of Tuitapac, Tuitapac, Tuitapac, and

seventy mantas, for the boat and the crew, he paid

mantas. He also hired quite a few more

itself for the price of 1500-2000 mantas.

It is unfortunate that we do not have a more

the value of mantas in terms of money, but in

in his residence, presented 1500, 1500, 1500, 1500

"mantas of Guernavaca, which are very good" in the

George estimated his total expenditure in terms of 1500

pesos. This was quite a large expenditure for the

years for a man whose salary was 1000 pesos a year

evaluating his salary in gold pesos of 1500 pesos

for the duration of his residence, which is quite

had spent on his previous trip to Tuitapac he was able to save

previously saved out of his salary, which he himself

<sup>27</sup> Ibid., II, 431-432.

<sup>28</sup> Ibid., I, 62.

<sup>29</sup> Ibid., I, 61.



daily support.<sup>30</sup> Martín de Calahorra stated that he had heard Quiroga's servants complaining that he was throwing everything into Santa Fe for the food, clothing, church, housing, and other needs of the Indians. It seemed that Quiroga esteemed Santa Fe higher than a position of great income and honor.<sup>31</sup> Fray Juan de San Román, an Augustinian, asserted that Quiroga was in debt because he had spent more than his salary in setting up Santa Fe, and the friar had often scolded him for spending so much on his project.<sup>32</sup>

But Quiroga found that his own income and the produce of the pueblo's fields did not satisfy the needs of his town. His friend, Bishop Fuenleal, appealed to the king to grant 1,500 fanegas of maize to feed the people who were living in Santa Fe. His letter of August 8, 1533, in which we find this appeal, indicates that he had already written the crown about this matter once previously.<sup>33</sup> By the time of his second appeal, his request had already been granted. In a cedula dated in Barcelona on July 5, 1533, the Emperor had commanded the royal officials of New Spain to give to the Indians of Santa Fe 1,500 fanegas of maize from the crown's stores each year for the years 1533 and 1534.<sup>34</sup>

One of Quiroga's main interests in founding Santa Fe de México had been to provide a place for the children who had been raised in

<sup>30</sup>Ibid., ff. 286v-287; Aguayo Spencer, p. 414.

<sup>31</sup>Aguayo Spencer, p. 418.

<sup>32</sup>Ibid., p. 452.

<sup>33</sup>El presidente de la audiencia de México a su Majestad, México, 8 de agosto, 1533, ENE, III, 118.

<sup>34</sup>RSA, ff. 68v-69v.



daily support. 30 Martin de Guzman, a man of letters, a servant complaining that he was not getting his share of the food, clothing, church, house, and other things. 31 It seemed that Gutierrez estimated that he was in a position to get income and honor. 32 Very soon after that, he was in debt because he had spent more than his share in setting up Santa Fe, and the king had often noticed his lack of wealth. 33 so much on his project.

But Gutierrez found that his own income and the expense of the people's fields did not satisfy the needs of his family. 34 The king, Bishop Mendez, appealed to the king to grant a 25% increase of salary to feed the people who were living in Santa Fe. 35 The letter of appeal, in which he said that he had already asked the crown about this matter and received no answer. 36 He said that he had already asked, his request had already been granted. 37 In a certain sense in November on July 5, 1555, the king had suggested the 25% increase of New Spain to give to the Indians of Santa Fe. 38 from the crown's treasury. 39 for the years 1555 and 1556. 40 One of Gutierrez's main interests in the kingdom was to have had been to provide a place for the children who had been taken in

---

30 Ibid., ff. 280r-281v; Nuevo Espanto, p. 415.  
31 Aguayo Espanto, p. 415.  
32 Ibid., p. 452.  
33 El presidente de la Audiencia de Santa Fe, Mexico, 8 de agosto, 1555, ff. III, 110.  
34 Ibid., ff. 45v-46r.



the monasteries. It seems that a group of these formed the nucleus around which the pueblo was formed. Fray Antonio de Ciudad Rodrigo, testifying for Quiroga in 1536, stated that the oidor had conferred with him about founding the pueblo when the friar was guardian of Texcoco, asking him to gather poor Indians of a good life who would live in Santa Fe and teach Christian doctrine. Fray Antonio took to Santa Fe about twenty-five of the best Indians he could find, who had been raised and instructed in the friary of Texcoco. Some of them were already married, and the rest were married in Santa Fe. It was this group who formed the custom of reciting the Office of Our Lady in common.<sup>35</sup> Even the Emperor, in his cedula granting corn for Santa Fe, considered it worthy of mention that the Indians and their wives rose each night to say matins of Our Lady at midnight and that they said the other hours of the office before going to work in the morning.<sup>36</sup> Juan Seciliano also attested to the fact that the Indians of Santa Fe sometimes sang Solemn Masses.<sup>37</sup>

This nucleus of well-trained Christian Indians were to serve under the direction of a friar or a secular priest for the instruction of others who would come to the pueblo. Quiroga put a great deal of emphasis on the work of his pueblo as a center for the instruction of Indians in the Catholic faith. In the questions of his descargos, he mentions the baptism of the infidel and the instruction of the ignorant

---

<sup>35</sup>Aguayo Spencer, pp. 435-436.

<sup>36</sup>RSA, f. 69.

<sup>37</sup>Aguayo Spencer, p. 416.



the mountain. It seems that a group of about twenty men  
arrived which the people were very friendly and helpful  
testifying for Antonio in 1935, and that the other group  
with him about reaching the house from the hill at the top of  
once, asking him to gather some food and a few little things  
in Santa Fe and teach the children. They were very friendly  
to about twenty-five of the best of the people, and some  
raised and instructed in the Catholic faith, and some  
ready married, and the next year married in Santa Fe, and  
group who formed the custom of visiting the house of Santa Fe  
over the summer, in his house, visiting some of the people  
it worthy of mention that the Indians and their wives and  
to say many of our best at night and that they said the other  
of the office before going to work in the morning. Santa Fe  
also attended to the first time the Indians of Santa Fe were  
37

Bohemian Museum.

This nucleus of well-trained Mexican Indians went to have  
under the direction of a teacher in a school at the station  
of others who would come to the house. Although not a group of 50  
emphasis on the work of the people as a group. The Indians  
Indians in the Catholic faith. In the house of the house, the  
mentions the baptism of the Indians and the instruction of the people

35 Aguayo Spanish, p. 11-12

36 New, p. 11.

37 Aguayo Spanish, p. 11-12



as works for which the pueblo was founded. He also stated that poor and orphaned Indians from remote areas and various language groups had been brought there to be instructed. They were given everything they needed for the love of God and, after they were well instructed in the Christian life and good habits, they went out to teach those of their own language and country.<sup>38</sup> According to Martín de Calahorra, Quiroga himself expended a great deal of effort in the instruction of the Indians, even composing sermons to be preached to them. Some of the residents of the hospital were expert enough to preach to the others with great fervor. Calahorra thought that the Indians were perhaps instructed better in Santa Fe than in the monasteries.<sup>39</sup> Alonso de Paz, a scribe, testified that he had not seen in any other part of New Spain more Christianity and good will than in Santa Fe.<sup>40</sup> Evidence of the success of the instructions given at Santa Fe is found in the testimony of Bartolomé Alguacil. He had seen the prior of St. Augustine baptize more than four or five hundred souls at the pueblo.<sup>41</sup> According to Father Alonso Rodríguez, a secular priest, the success of the instructions in the faith was not due to any pressure that was put on the Indians but only to the love which led them on.<sup>42</sup>

---

<sup>38</sup> Ibid., pp. 413-414.

<sup>39</sup> Ibid., pp. 417-418.

<sup>40</sup> Ibid., p. 437.

<sup>41</sup> Ibid., p. 421.

<sup>42</sup> Ibid., p. 440.



as works for which the people were not prepared. It was  
and organized to help the people in their need.  
been brought into the world. It was a new  
needed for the love of the people. It was a new  
Christian life and a new world. It was a new  
own language and a new way of life. It was a new  
himself exposed to the people. It was a new  
Indians, even occupying houses in the Indian  
residents of the hospital were not allowed to  
with great fervor. It was a new way of life.  
instructed better in the Indian language. It was a new  
a native, testified that it was a new way of life.  
more Christianly and more with the people. It was a new  
muscle of the Indian. It was a new way of life.  
of the Indian. It was a new way of life.  
more than ten or five hundred. It was a new way of life.  
Father Alonzo Rodriguez, a Spanish priest, was a native of the  
them in the last ten years. It was a new way of life.  
Indians but only to the 1st of the year.

- 
- 38 Ind. v. Ind.
  - 39 Ind. v. Ind.
  - 40 Ind. v. Ind.
  - 41 Ind. v. Ind.
  - 42 Ind. v. Ind.



Martín de Calahorra maintained that the success of Santa Fe as a school of the faith had aroused the envy of some of those who were occupied in the conversion of the Indians and they would have liked to undo it.<sup>43</sup> The testimony of the friars in the residencia, however, expressed only admiration for the self-sacrificing work of the good *oidor*. Fray Luis de Fuensalida, a Franciscan who had preached in Santa Fe frequently, said that he would have liked to be entrusted with the care of the hospital and that many other friars were of the same mind.<sup>44</sup> Bishop Zumárraga felt that Quiroga by his good works gave a lesson and even a correction to the bishops of those parts, and the bishop expressed a holy envy for Quiroga because he did so much good without failing in his office of *oidor*.<sup>45</sup> In the opinion of Fray Juan de San Román, no faith could be founded in those regions unless the Indians were brought together as they were in Santa Fe.<sup>46</sup>

A corollary of the thorough instruction given to the Indians was the surrendering of idols by the people of the area of Santa Fe. Quiroga asserted that the neighbors of the pueblo, attracted by its good Christian works, willingly brought out the idols that they had kept buried or hidden and gave them over to the residents of the pueblo, where they were burned.<sup>47</sup> Some of the Indians accompanied Bartolomé

---

<sup>43</sup>Ibid., p. 418.

<sup>44</sup>Ibid., pp. 432-433.

<sup>45</sup>Ibid., p. 443.

<sup>46</sup>Ibid., pp. 451-452.

<sup>47</sup>Ibid., p. 413.



Martin de Caceres mentioned that the school was a school of the faith had received the name of Martin de Caceres occupied in the convent of the hospital and the school was occupied in it.<sup>43</sup> The testimony of the school in its possession was expressed only administration for the school was expressed only. From this de Caceres mentioned that the school was expressed in the school. He frequently said that the school had been occupied in the school of the hospital and that was the school of the school. Bishop Sumner said that the school was a school of the school even a correction to the school of the school and the school expressed a holy envy for the school because he did not want to be in his office of school.<sup>44</sup> In the opinion of the school the school could be founded in the school and the school was together as they were in the school.<sup>45</sup> A corollary of the school was the school of the school was the school of the school by the school of the school. Quiza asserted that the school of the school, attracted by the school Christian works, willingly accepted the school of the school kept buried or hidden and gave the school to the school of the school where they were buried.<sup>46</sup> The school of the school was the school of the school.

<sup>43</sup> Ibid., p. 418.

<sup>44</sup> Ibid., pp. 433-435.

<sup>45</sup> Ibid., p. 443.

<sup>46</sup> Ibid., pp. 451-452.

<sup>47</sup> Ibid., p. 413.



Alguacil to the area where he was corregidor, about six leagues from Santa Fe, to seek idols in that area. They brought some to Alguacil who sent them to Quiroga, and afterward they were burned.<sup>48</sup>

The pueblo was also founded as a refuge for all types of unfortunate people. In his will Quiroga speaks specifically of "indios pobres y miserables personas, pupilos, viudas, huérfanos, y mellizos." Indian mothers in their poverty and misery reportedly killed their twin children because they were not able to raise them.<sup>49</sup> It is worthy of note that Quiroga speaks of mellizos (twins) and not mestizos, as was given in León's copy of the will. This faulty reading led some scholars to quote Quiroga as saying that Indian mothers killed their mestizo children. The pueblo of Santa Fe served, then, as an orphanage as well as a center of Christianization. Quiroga considered the arranging of Christian marriages for orphans as one of the noteworthy benefits of his institution.<sup>50</sup>

He also looked out for the education of those whom he considered sufficiently capable. At the time of his residencia in 1536 he had an Augustinian friar, Alonso Borja, residing in Santa Fe, who gave lessons in grammar, taught many children to read and write, and trained others in singing for the religious services.<sup>51</sup> Fray Alonso had learned the

<sup>48</sup>Ibid., p. 421.

<sup>49</sup>[El fiscal] con el Dean y Cabildo de Michoacán sobre el patronato de los hospitales de Santa Fe y Colegio de San Nicolás, 1566, AGI, Justicia, leg. 208, no. 4. This reading is also found in a copy of the will in AGI, México, leg. 374. Cf. León, Quiroga, p. 84.

<sup>50</sup>Aguayo Spencer, p. 413.

<sup>51</sup>Ibid., pp. 413-414.







language of the Indians in order to be able to teach in Santa Fe.<sup>52</sup>

Although Quiroga used the word hospital in the general sense of refuge, shelter, or "home" for unfortunates, it also included the idea of hospital in our modern English usage, as a place to care for the sick and injured. In question 34 of his descargos Quiroga listed the care of the sick first among the works of the pueblo,<sup>53</sup> but this aspect does not seem to have made much of an impression on those who saw the hospital. None of the witnesses made any enlightening comments about the way in which the sick were cared for. As we have seen already in the Ordinances, a special building was set aside for the sick and they were to be given the best of everything in the hospital.<sup>54</sup> But such an infirmary building had apparently not yet been built at the time of Quiroga's residencia, since Don Juan makes no reference to it in his relation.

Besides the care of the sick, the Indians of the pueblo also attended to the burial of the dead. Quiroga mentions this several times in the course of his residencia. Particularly in a defense of his work written in answer to charges brought against it, he gives a vivid explanation of the necessity of this service. He says that the pueblo was to serve "as a cemetery of all the dead of that district who previously were eaten by birds and dogs and other animals."<sup>55</sup>

<sup>52</sup>Ibid., p. 436.

<sup>53</sup>Ibid., p. 413.

<sup>54</sup>Quiroga, "Ordenanzas," pp. 262-263.

<sup>55</sup>RSA, f. 63.



language of the Indians in order to be able to speak in their own  
 Although Quirós used the same word in the Spanish language  
 of refuge, shelter, or "house" for the Indians, it is not the same  
 idea of hospital in our modern Spanish sense, as a place in which  
 the sick and injured, in need of the doctor's aid, were placed  
 the care of the sick that was the work of the Indian. But this  
 aspect does not seem to have been noted in the translation as far as  
 saw the hospital. None of the Indians who were in the hospital  
 about the way in which the sick were treated, but we have seen already  
 in the Ordinances, a general building was set aside for the sick and  
 they were to be given the best of treatment in the hospital. The  
 such an infirmary building had previously not been built for the  
 time of Quirós's residence, and then there was no reason to it  
 in his relation.

Besides the care of the sick, the Indians of the pueblo also  
 attended to the burial of the dead. Quirós mentions this several  
 times in the course of his residence. Especially in a letter of  
 his work written in answer to the question proposed against it, he gives  
 a vivid explanation of the necessity of this service. He says that the  
 pueblo was to serve "as a cemetery of all the dead of the settlement  
 who previously were eaten by birds and dogs and other animals."

<sup>52</sup> Ibid., p. 431.

<sup>53</sup> Ibid., p. 415.

<sup>54</sup> Quirós, "Ordinances," pp. 265-266.

<sup>55</sup> RGA, I, 68.

EXERCISES  
 CONTENT



An added benefit of the pueblo was the security of the area and the care of those who passed that way. Santa Fe was on the main road to the mines of Michoacán and the new conquests of Nuño de Guzmán in the northwest. Many escaped slaves of the Spaniards, both Indian and Negro, had found their way into the mountains near Santa Fe, which separated the Valley of Mexico and that of Toluca. They lived by raiding maize fields and taking what little the isolated Indians had in their houses. After the establishment of Santa Fe the local Indians brought their complaints to the residents of the pueblo and with their co-operation these maltreatments were brought to an end.<sup>56</sup>

Due to the nearness of Santa Fe to the main highway, the residents and the Indians were endangered by unscrupulous travelers, who would have liked to drag them along as burden bearers and cause them other injuries and vexations. Because of this danger Quiroga appealed to the audiencia for protection. On February 14, 1536, a cedula acordada, issued by Viceroy Mendoza and the Licenciados Ceinos, Quiroga, and Loaysa, granted royal protection to the Indians of Santa Fe and threatened with a fine of 200 pesos all those who should go against this decree.<sup>57</sup> Apparently this protection was effective, since Fray Juan de San Román inferred in his testimony for the residencia, later in 1536, that because of the favor accorded the Indians of Santa

---

<sup>56</sup> Aguayo Spencer, pp. 449-450.

<sup>57</sup> León, Documentos, pp. 5-7. León's copy, however, errs in regard to the date, giving the year as 1533. This is an obvious error, since Viceroy Mendoza did not arrive in New Spain until 1535. Two copies of the decree in Quiroga vs. Martín Cortés give the year as 1536.



An added benefit of the ... the care of those who ... to the mine of ... the northwest. Many ... Negro, had found their ... separated the Valley of ... ing since ... their houses. After the ... brought their complaints to the residents of the ... co-operation these ...

Due to the ... residents and the Indians were ... who would have liked to ... them other injuries and ... appealed to the ... cedula acordada, issued by ... Gaitanar, and ... and threatened with a ... against this decree. ... later in 1556, that because of ...

26 Agro-Spanish, ...

27 Agro-Spanish, ... regard to the date, ... since Viceroy ... copies of the decree in ...



Fe they were freed of many coercions.<sup>58</sup> In spite of any harm that may have come to the Indians through misconduct of the Spaniards, Bartolomé Alguacil testified that the Spaniards who passed by way of Santa Fe could always expect kind treatment there.<sup>59</sup>

Less than a month previous to the audiencia's cedula of protection, a royal cedula had been signed by the Queen in Madrid, granting royal favor to Quiroga's two pueblos of Santa Fe. This brief document, dated January 16, 1536, was addressed to Viceroy Mendoza. After mentioning in a general way the good that was being done by the pueblos, it commended them to the viceroy and commanded that they be given the favors and privileges that seemed to be appropriate.<sup>60</sup>

In four years Quiroga had, then, made an excellent beginning in his home for unfortunates, having obtained lands, constructed buildings, gathered in unfortunates of all kinds, and obtained the favor of the government both in Spain and New Spain. But, like all great works, this had not been achieved without serious opposition and even malicious misinterpretation of the oidor's intentions. We will now look into this less pleasant side of the story of Santa Fe de México.

---

<sup>58</sup> Aguayo Spencer, p. 451.

<sup>59</sup> Ibid., p. 421.

<sup>60</sup> León, Documentos, p. 5.



be they were tried of war, or otherwise, the fact that they  
 have come to the United States, and the fact that they  
 Alvarado testified that the government had no right to  
 could always expect him to testify that  
 less than a month previous to the trial, and the fact that  
 testifies, a royal order had been signed by the king in Madrid, for the  
 royal favor to Alvarado's two brothers of Santa Fe. This royal order was  
 dated January 16, 1855, and addressed to the king, and the fact that  
 tioning in a general way the fact that the king had signed the order,  
 it commended them to the king, and commended that they be given the  
 favors and privileges that seemed to be appropriate.  
 In four years Alvarado had, then, made an excellent statement  
 in his home for uniformity, having obtained favor, and the fact that  
 king, gathered in uniformity of all kinds, and the fact that  
 the government both in Spain and in Santa Fe, like all great courts,  
 this had not been achieved without serious opposition, and even a  
 misinterpretation of the king's intentions. We will now look into this  
 less pleasant side of the story of Santa Fe.



## CHAPTER V

### DIFFICULTIES OF SANTA FE DE MÉXICO

From the very beginning Licenciado Quiroga's favorite project aroused considerable protest, particularly on the part of the cabildo of Mexico City. The cabildo, fiercely jealous of its prerogatives in the area surrounding the city, was not happy to see one of the oidores using Indian labor from there to build his own little town. On May 6, 1533, in a letter to the King, they objected to Quiroga's pueblo because it was being built at the expense of the natives and was drawing part of the Indian population away from the city.<sup>1</sup> The cabildo continued to keep close watch on Quiroga's activities. On June 16, 1533, they discussed the fact that Quiroga was constructing many buildings in Santa Fe at the expense of the Indians with the result that there were no Indian laborers to do the public works of the city. They commissioned one of the alcaldes and four regidores of the city to go with a scribe to Santa Fe to see the pueblo and report on it to the King.<sup>2</sup> A short time later, on June 30, 1533, Jerónimo López, regidor of México, presented a complaint to the cabildo that would later form the basis of one of the most serious charges against Quiroga in his residencia. He claimed that Quiroga was building an excessively large place and that the poor Indians,

---

<sup>1</sup>El ayuntamiento de México al Rey, 6 de mayo, 1533, ENE, III, 84.

<sup>2</sup>AC, III, 41.







unable to satisfy the quota of adobe and bricks for Santa Fe which their principales required, were taking their own houses apart to get the necessary materials. Even women and children were carrying burdens to the work, which was two leagues from the city. Not only were the Indians supplying the materials but they were not being given any salary for their work. López asked that an order be issued, requiring that the Indians be paid for their work and the materials.<sup>3</sup>

A little less than three years later, on February 28, 1536, López made substantially the same accusations against Quiroga and his work in the course of the latter's residencia. He added that the Indians told him that they were doing the work without pay because Quiroga would be angry if they did not do it. He claimed that the principales of México and Santiago Tlalteloloo had complained about the work and said they were suffering harm from it because of the amount of work that the maceguals, or common working men, had to undergo.<sup>4</sup> Don Juan, governor of Santiago, also mentioned the difficulty of the work in his statement for the residencia. The Indians had to carry some of the building materials--stone, lime, and adobe--from Mexico City. The wood had been gotten from a mountain near Santa Fe. He said that Don Pedro, governor of the barrio of México, had gone to Quiroga and told him that, because it was winter and the rainy season, the maceguals did not have adobes and they were taking their houses apart in order to carry the bricks to Santa Fe. Don Juan maintained that if any Spaniard or other person had

---

<sup>3</sup>Ibid.

<sup>4</sup>RSA, ff. 157-159v.







asked them to build this building, they would have first made a contract with him and would have asked if he had wood, stone, adobes, and everything necessary, but because it was the tetuan who asked it of them, they had done it for him.<sup>5</sup>

From these complaints was made up the twenty-sixth charge of the residencia, a charge that brought Quiroga's capable pen into play in defending his work and resulted in the testimony which has given most of our information regarding the early history of Santa Fe. Don Juan himself took most of the sting out of his own and López' testimony by saying that they had done the work of their own free will and because it was for God. Don Pedro added that they had not been subjected to force or pressure to do the work although they would not have done it for any other Spaniard for so little.<sup>6</sup>

Among the documents which Quiroga presented to disprove the charges was a copy of a statement that Don Juan and Don Pedro made before the audiencia at Quiroga's request on March 19, 1534. Quiroga himself first presented a statement to be read by a scribe and translated for the Indians by an interpreter to the effect that the only reason he had not paid the Indians anything for their work previously was that they had offered to do the work themselves. They had done this because it was a work of God and they wanted to do it for love of God to gain merit, because it was a pious work to make up for the many works they had done for the devil while they were pagans, and also because it was not for the

---

<sup>5</sup>Ibid., ff. 195v-196v.

<sup>6</sup>Ibid., ff. 196v-197v.







sake of an outsider but for the benefit of themselves and their relatives, friends, poor natives, and orphans. Of late it had come to Quiroga's attention that they were saying that they had not done it of their own desire. He now asked them to declare before the other members of the audiencia whether they had done it to serve God and to receive a reward from Him, or if they wanted pay. If the latter was true, he was willing to pay them whatever price the other members of the audiencia should place on their work. In order to give the Indians greater liberty to speak their minds, Quiroga withdrew from the room before the statement was read to the Indians, asking the scribe to give him a copy of their statement for the satisfaction of his conscience and the safeguard of his rights.

The answer of the Indians was that, when Quiroga had asked them to do the work, he had offered to pay them for it. But they had told him that they would willingly do what they could on the work until it was finished for the reasons mentioned above and also because they saw that Quiroga himself spent his money with such good will for the service of God and the benefit of the natives. With this good will they had begun the work and would continue it until its completion. Quiroga had continually offered to pay them for the work but they wanted their reward from God for Whom alone they had done it and not for anyone else nor for any other payment. They had let the maceguals know that the work was being done for love of God and they were pleased to do it. If anyone had made a complaint about the work, it must have been some crazy person-- "algún loco de poco saber."<sup>7</sup>

---

<sup>7</sup>Ibid., ff. 73v-77v.



...and the other...

...the first... the second... the third... the fourth... the fifth... the sixth... the seventh... the eighth... the ninth... the tenth... the eleventh... the twelfth... the thirteenth... the fourteenth... the fifteenth... the sixteenth... the seventeenth... the eighteenth... the nineteenth... the twentieth... the twenty-first... the twenty-second... the twenty-third... the twenty-fourth... the twenty-fifth... the twenty-sixth... the twenty-seventh... the twenty-eighth... the twenty-ninth... the thirtieth... the thirty-first... the thirty-second... the thirty-third... the thirty-fourth... the thirty-fifth... the thirty-sixth... the thirty-seventh... the thirty-eighth... the thirty-ninth... the fortieth... the forty-first... the forty-second... the forty-third... the forty-fourth... the forty-fifth... the forty-sixth... the forty-seventh... the forty-eighth... the forty-ninth... the fiftieth... the fifty-first... the fifty-second... the fifty-third... the fifty-fourth... the fifty-fifth... the fifty-sixth... the fifty-seventh... the fifty-eighth... the fifty-ninth... the sixtieth... the sixty-first... the sixty-second... the sixty-third... the sixty-fourth... the sixty-fifth... the sixty-sixth... the sixty-seventh... the sixty-eighth... the sixty-ninth... the seventieth... the seventy-first... the seventy-second... the seventy-third... the seventy-fourth... the seventy-fifth... the seventy-sixth... the seventy-seventh... the seventy-eighth... the seventy-ninth... the eightieth... the eighty-first... the eighty-second... the eighty-third... the eighty-fourth... the eighty-fifth... the eighty-sixth... the eighty-seventh... the eighty-eighth... the eighty-ninth... the ninetieth... the ninety-first... the ninety-second... the ninety-third... the ninety-fourth... the ninety-fifth... the ninety-sixth... the ninety-seventh... the ninety-eighth... the ninety-ninth... the hundredth...

...the first... the second... the third... the fourth... the fifth... the sixth... the seventh... the eighth... the ninth... the tenth... the eleventh... the twelfth... the thirteenth... the fourteenth... the fifteenth... the sixteenth... the seventeenth... the eighteenth... the nineteenth... the twentieth... the twenty-first... the twenty-second... the twenty-third... the twenty-fourth... the twenty-fifth... the twenty-sixth... the twenty-seventh... the twenty-eighth... the twenty-ninth... the thirtieth... the thirty-first... the thirty-second... the thirty-third... the thirty-fourth... the thirty-fifth... the thirty-sixth... the thirty-seventh... the thirty-eighth... the thirty-ninth... the fortieth... the forty-first... the forty-second... the forty-third... the forty-fourth... the forty-fifth... the forty-sixth... the forty-seventh... the forty-eighth... the forty-ninth... the fiftieth... the fifty-first... the fifty-second... the fifty-third... the fifty-fourth... the fifty-fifth... the fifty-sixth... the fifty-seventh... the fifty-eighth... the fifty-ninth... the sixtieth... the sixty-first... the sixty-second... the sixty-third... the sixty-fourth... the sixty-fifth... the sixty-sixth... the sixty-seventh... the sixty-eighth... the sixty-ninth... the seventieth... the seventy-first... the seventy-second... the seventy-third... the seventy-fourth... the seventy-fifth... the seventy-sixth... the seventy-seventh... the seventy-eighth... the seventy-ninth... the eightieth... the eighty-first... the eighty-second... the eighty-third... the eighty-fourth... the eighty-fifth... the eighty-sixth... the eighty-seventh... the eighty-eighth... the eighty-ninth... the ninetieth... the ninety-first... the ninety-second... the ninety-third... the ninety-fourth... the ninety-fifth... the ninety-sixth... the ninety-seventh... the ninety-eighth... the ninety-ninth... the hundredth...



This piece of testimony must have been a rather bitter pill for Jerónimo López, since, as secretary of the audiencia, he was the scribe who had to make the record of it. Two years later in his own testimony for the residencia he gave a very distorted description of this incident.<sup>8</sup> The statement of the Indians agrees well with what Bishop Fuenleal had said in a letter of August 8, 1533, in which he stated that the Indians had done the work "con alegre voluntad."<sup>9</sup> In spite of the protestations of the two Indian governors, Quiroga did eventually give them something for their work. We know both from their statements in the residencia and from Quiroga's list of expenses that he gave them each 120 mantas.<sup>10</sup>

Quiroga's requerimiento to the Indians on March 19, 1534, appears to have been an answer to López' accusations of June 30, 1533. But why did Quiroga take such a long time to answer López? Quiroga stated in his requerimiento to the Indian governors that their complaints had newly come to his attention,<sup>11</sup> indicating that he had probably not heard of them previously. The truth of the matter is that López' complaint had probably been given as something of a stab in the back to the oidor. In the summer of 1533 Quiroga was sent to Michoacán to make a visitation in that area because of disturbed conditions there. We do not know of the exact date of his departure but the end of June seems the probable

<sup>8</sup> Ibid., ff. 159-159v.

<sup>9</sup> El presidente de la audiencia de México a Su Majestad, 8 de agosto, 1533, ENE, III, 118.

<sup>10</sup> RSA, ff. 196v-197, 452.

<sup>11</sup> Ibid., f. 75.



This place at least was not a very good one for the  
 Jérôme López, since, as a result of the conditions, he was  
 who had to make the report of 11. Two years later in his own position  
 for the President he gave a very different impression of the matter.  
 The statement of the Indian agent was very different from that of  
 said in a letter of August 6, 1933. In fact he stated that the Indian  
 had done the work "then since 1910" in order of the President  
 of the two Indian governments, which was not a very good thing  
 for their work. We have not been able to find any statement in the records  
 and from Góngora's list of expenses there are given that each of the  
 Góngora's representative to the Indian agent on March 15, 1933, reported  
 to have been an answer to López' suggestion of June 15, 1933. It was  
 did Góngora take such a long time to answer López' letter, which in  
 his representative to the Indian agent that such a long time  
 nearly come to his attention,<sup>11</sup> indicating that he had probably not been  
 of them previously. The fact of it being in that letter, which had  
 had probably been given as something of a list in the form of a letter.  
 In the summer of 1933 Góngora was sent to Mexico to make a visit  
 in that area because of differences between them. It is not known  
 the exact date of his departure but the end of June seems the most likely

<sup>8</sup> Ibid., II, 153-154.

<sup>9</sup> El presidente de la república de México en su mensaje, agosto, 1933, III, 11.

<sup>10</sup> EBA, II, 195-197, 404.

<sup>11</sup> Ibid., I, 75.



time. On August 5, 1533, the audiencia wrote the Emperor that they had received a letter from Quiroga saying that he had arrived in Michoacán and had started to check on certain irregularities.<sup>12</sup> The time required for the oidor to make the trip from Mexico to Michoacán, to gather enough information to write back to the audiencia, and to send the letter back to Mexico City, would very probably have exceeded a month. It may also be true that Quiroga's departure was the signal for the inspection of Santa Fe which the cabildo decreed on June 16, 1533.<sup>13</sup> Quiroga, then, may very well not have known officially of López' complaints until he returned from Michoacán in 1534.

In his accusation in the residencia López also attempted to cast the blame for one of his own misdemeanors on Quiroga's Indian laborers. He said that he had seen them taking apart some buildings and the enclosing wall of Chapultepec and that they told him they were taking the stone to Santa Fe.<sup>14</sup> Quiroga was quick to point out that it was López himself who had raided the wall and buildings of Chapultepec for stone when he was building an estancia for cattle in that neighborhood. For this, Quiroga says, López had received a reprimand from his own cabildo.<sup>15</sup> The actas of the cabildo bear Quiroga out on this point. On September 11, 1534, López was commanded by the cabildo to rebuild within a month the

<sup>12</sup>La audiencia de México al Rey, 5 de agosto, 1533, ENE, III, 110-111.

<sup>13</sup>AC, III, 41.

<sup>14</sup>RSA, f. 157v.

<sup>15</sup>Ibid., ff. 64, 289v.



time. On August 2, 1933, the witnesses...  
received a letter from...  
and had started to...  
for the order to...  
information to write...  
to Mexico City, and...  
be true that...  
Santa Fe which the...  
any very well not...  
returned from...  
In his...  
the blame for one...  
He said that he...  
the wall of...  
to Santa Fe.<sup>14</sup>...  
who had raised the...  
was building an...  
Garcia says, however...  
The... of the...  
1934, Lopez was...  
1934, Lopez was...

12  
110-111.

13  
AC, III, 41.

14  
HSA, I, 137.

15  
Told, II, 22, 23.



wall of Chapultepec which he had caused to be torn down in order to build corrals. If López did not rebuild the wall to its previous condition within the allotted time, it would be rebuilt at his cost.<sup>16</sup>

As to López' accusation that the Indians were taking their houses apart in order to get adobes, Quiroga disclaimed any knowledge of it. He thought that they might have dismantled the adobe huts of some dead people, since they had the custom that when the master of the house died they would desert it, take it apart, and rebuild it in another place.<sup>17</sup> He also maintained that they customarily carried along materials when they went to any job and that it did not do any good to tell them not to do so, since it was an ingrained custom and the group of workers changed so frequently that one could not tell all of them.<sup>18</sup> Martín de Calahorra testified for Quiroga that the Indians were not accustomed to go to any work empty-handed.<sup>19</sup>

The bitterest criticisms of Quiroga's work to appear in the residencia were contained in a group of capitulos presented by Maestre de Roa and Rodrigo de Castañeda, citizens of Mexico City. They saw no value in the pueblo because there were more than enough monasteries in the area of the city to take care of instruction in the faith. They accused Quiroga of so favoring the Indians of Santa Fe that they mistreated other Indians with impunity and that any slave in the area felt

---

<sup>16</sup>AC, III, 98.

<sup>17</sup>RSA, f. 64v.

<sup>18</sup>Ibid., f. 289

<sup>19</sup>Aguayo Spencer, p. 419.







that he could find refuge in Santa Fe. They even went to the extent of calling Santa Fe a "castillo roquero y casa de mujeres." They complained also that Quiroga had cut off the water canal that had previously watered the farms and ranches in that area and that he had taken over much land around Santa Fe that belonged to Indians and Spaniards.<sup>20</sup> These accusations were so extreme that Licenciado Loaysa, the judge of residencia, did not even include them in his charges against Quiroga. The imputations of improper conduct to Quiroga and his Indians were amply contradicted by the witnesses for Quiroga's descargos, who included encomenderos, lawyers, friars, secular priests, and even the bishop of Mexico. Perhaps their attitude is best summed up in the words of Bachiller Juan Ortega, a man of extensive experience in Mexico: "a los que les parece mal [la obra de Santa Fe] no juzgan de buenos colores."<sup>21</sup>

Judge Loaysa, depending not only on the word of these witnesses but also on a personal visit to Santa Fe, agreed with their high opinion of Quiroga's project. On May 19, 1536, when he passed sentence on the charges brought against the oidores, he completely absolved Quiroga of any guilt in regard to Santa Fe, saying that it was a work of God, done for His service, and both profitable and necessary for the Indians.<sup>22</sup>

Distinct from the residencia but connected with it was the suit of the Indians of Ocoyoacac against Quiroga over the island of Tultepec.

<sup>20</sup>RSA, ff. 601v-603v.

<sup>21</sup>Aguayo Spencer, p. 420.

<sup>22</sup>Ibid., pp. 453-454.



that he could find refuge in Mexico. He, however, was not to be deterred.

calling Santa Fe a "satellite" of the United States.

plained also that although he was not a native of the United States, he was not a foreigner.

entered the United States and remained in the United States for a long time.

much land around Santa Fe. He was not a native of the United States.

These accusations were not without foundation. He was not a native of the United States.

testimony, did not even include him in his list of witnesses.

The imputations of improper conduct to Santa Fe were not without foundation.

amply contradicted by the evidence in Santa Fe's possession, and in-

cluded amendments, January, 1932, and February, 1932.

diocese of Mexico. Perhaps Santa Fe's list of witnesses was not complete.

of Basilian Juan Ortega, a man of extensive experience in Santa Fe.

for the last period and the case of Santa Fe and Ortega's case.

colored."

Judge Jones, speaking not only in the case of Santa Fe but also on a personal visit to Santa Fe, and a visit to Santa Fe.

of Santa Fe's project. In 1932, when a person came to Santa Fe.

charges brought against the church, the church had already collected.

any fault in regard to Santa Fe, Santa Fe was not to be blamed.

for his services, and both Santa Fe and Ortega were necessary for the church.

Distinct from the religious and economic aspects of the case.

of the Indians of Grovermont, and the case of the Indians of Grovermont.

20

ACA, 11, 603-607.

21

Agave's Spenser, 1930.

22

Ald., 1930-1932.



The suit was opened on March 1, 1536, when Don Pedro, cacique of Ocoyoacac, presented a complaint to Licenciado Loaysa concerning Quiroga's possession of the island. They complained that Quiroga had taken the island against their will, even though it lay within the area of their pueblo and they had possessed and used it from time immemorial. Because Quiroga was an oidor and a powerful personage, they had not dared to reclaim the island previously. They asked Loaysa to command Quiroga to return the island to them.

Quiroga in reply said that he had bought the island and possessed it by just titles and had given it to the Indians of Santa Fe to use for farming for the support of the pueblo. He had bought it also in order to establish an oratory there for the instruction of the Indians of Ocoyoacac. Although some of the Indians of the area had cultivated a piece of ground there, the inhabitants of Ocoyoacac itself had not made use of it because the maize frequently froze there, because it was next to estancias of cows and pigs belonging to Spaniards, and because the pueblo had an excess of better lands in other areas.<sup>23</sup>

Unfortunately we do not know how the different parties attempted to establish their claims, since we have copies only of the two petitions and of the sentence. Quiroga's list of expenses for Santa Fe indicates that he paid forty mantas to the pueblo of Capulhuac for the island.<sup>24</sup> It is possible that the ownership of the island was disputed between Capulhuac and its neighbor, Ocoyoacac. Whatever the facts of

---

<sup>23</sup>Ibid., pp. 457-459.

<sup>24</sup>RSA, f. 452.



The suit was opened on March 1, 1901 and the court  
 Goveas, presented a complaint to the court  
 Goveas' possession of the island. The complaint stated that Goveas had  
 taken the island against their will, as a threat to the island  
 area of their people and they had possessed it for a long time  
 memorial. Because Goveas was an alien and a low class person, they  
 had not dared to reclaim the island previously. They asked the court  
 command Goveas to return the island to them.

Goveas in reply said that he had bought the island and  
 passed it by just title and had given it to the Indians of Goveas  
 to use for farming for the purpose of the island. He had also  
 also in order to establish an title to the island and the  
 Indians of Goveas. With a view of the interest of the island  
 cultivated a piece of ground near the Indian village and  
 had not made use of it because the title to the island was  
 it was next to establish of case and give evidence to Goveas, and  
 because the pueblo had an record of title lands in other records.<sup>23</sup>

Unfortunately we do not know the exact date when Goveas  
 to establish their claims, since we have only the two  
 tion and of the sentence. Goveas' title to the island was  
 indicated that he paid forty marks for the title to the island and the  
 island.<sup>24</sup> It is possible that the memorial of the island was located  
 between Capulbas and the neighborhood, Goveas. However, it is not

<sup>23</sup> Ibid., pp. 457-458.

<sup>24</sup> Ibid., p. 453.



the case were, Loaysa awarded the decision to Quiroga on November 6, 1536.<sup>25</sup>

Quiroga was thus vindicated in his residencia, but though his enemies were defeated they were not vanquished. The cabildo of Mexico City continued to snipe at Santa Fe during the rest of Quiroga's life and even after his death. On February 6, 1540, when they learned that the Indians of Santa Fe had established a fulling-mill, they immediately demanded that they show by what legal right they had done so. They threatened legal action if the pueblo did not show its título by the next meeting of the cabildo.<sup>26</sup> We have no information as to what followed upon this demand.

During the mid-1500's the City of Mexico was suing to get Santa Fe's royal grant of land revoked. Again we do not have the actual record of the suit, although we know from contemporary documents that it went on over a period of several years. The actas of the cabildo for January 12, 1554, state that on that day the members of the cabildo talked about the suit which the city was carrying on concerning what had been set aside for Santa Fe and its so-called hospital, which was so near to the city, and so prejudicial to its citizens and residents. They commanded Gonzalo Ruiz, regidor and procurador mayor of the city, to search out this suit and bring it before them.<sup>27</sup>

<sup>25</sup> Aguayo Spencer, pp. 459-460.

<sup>26</sup> AC, IV, 188.

<sup>27</sup> Ibid., VI, 126.



the case was, however, decided in favor of the Government.  
1930.

Corroborating evidence was obtained from the  
witnesses who testified that the Government's  
City continued to enjoy the same status as before  
and even after his death. In January 1930, when the  
the Institute of Santa Fe had established a full-time  
demanded that they show by what legal right they had  
threatened legal action if the people did not state the  
next meeting of the council. No date was set for that  
fixed upon this demand.

During the mid-1930's the City of Mexico was under the  
Pe's royal grant of land revoked. Again we do not have the  
record of the suit, although we know from contemporary documents that it  
went on over a period of several years. The status of the council  
January 12, 1934, state that on that day the members of the council  
talked about the suit which the city was carrying on concerning the  
been set aside for Santa Fe and the so-called capital, which was no  
near to the city, and so designated to the citizens and residents  
commanded Gonzalo Ruiz, register and registrar general of the state, to  
search out this suit and bring it before the court.

Agave Springs, pp. 232-240.  
AC, IV, 1931  
Ibid., VI, 1932



In the course of a separate suit that Gonzalo Ruiz carried on with Quiroga and his Indians in 1556, he refers to the fact that the city had made a judicial appeal regarding the grant of lands to Santa Fe and that the suit over it was pending in the royal audiencia. He probably expressed the city's case in the sixth question of his interrogatory. He claimed that the land which the Indians held by reason of their grant was very extensive and most of it was not cultivated nor used, because they could not use it nor did they need it for their support. The city had been and was being harmed because this land had been adjudicated to Santa Fe and not divided among the Spaniards and cultivated for the provisioning of the city. The diocese was also losing tithes that it could have collected if the land were planted and the crops harvested. Quiroga's reply to this was that the lands of Santa Fe were nearly all under cultivation with due regard to changes according to the year.<sup>28</sup> This indicates that the Indians of Santa Fe were following the traditional agricultural practice of rotating the use of their land. Testimony by Alonso Hernández in Quiroga's suit with Martín Cortés in 1563 indicates that at that time some of the land of Santa Fe was being cultivated by outside farmers who took the rents to Quiroga.<sup>29</sup>

Ruiz' interrogatory of 1556 repeated the old accusation that the Indians of Santa Fe, with Quiroga's protection, occupied lands that did not belong to them, but it must be remembered that this was part of a

---

<sup>28</sup> Quiroga vs. Gonzalo Ruiz (folios not numbered).

<sup>29</sup> Quiroga vs. Martín Cortés, f. 190.







suit against Ruiz for occupying lands of Santa Fe. According to Ruiz the pueblo was harmful to the city, and had even been called a den of thieves. The Indians came to it from towns belonging to the crown or from towns that paid tribute to their encomenderos, because in Santa Fe they did not have to pay tribute and all were rich. Slaves who fled from their masters were given asylum there.<sup>30</sup> Thus, the main complaints of the City of Mexico seem to have been that they could not get their hands on the lands of Santa Fe to divide it among the Spaniards, that Indians were going there because they were protected from a heavy burden of tribute, and that slaves were escaping to the pueblo for protection. Such complaints must have indicated to Quiroga a degree of success in his work.

The struggle with the City of Mexico was still unsettled in 1563, but had apparently been allowed to lie dormant for some time. On January 29, 1563, the cabildo instructed its procurador mayor to ask the audiencia for the proceso which the city had carried on with the bishop of Michoacán over Santa Fe so that the cabildo could decide what provisions to make for the good of the city.<sup>31</sup> On May 24, 1563, in an instruction sent to its attorneys in Spain, the city asked the King to return the lands of Santa Fe to the city so that they would not fall into the hands of a third party after Quiroga's death. They made it appear as though they were looking out for the good of the little town

---

<sup>30</sup> Quiroga vs. Gonzalo Ruiz.

<sup>31</sup> AC, VII, 103.







of Santa Fe.<sup>32</sup> Nothing seems to have come of this petition. This is the last indication of an attempt against Santa Fe by the City of Mexico during Quiroga's lifetime, although, as we shall see in a later chapter, they returned to the fray after his death. During the last two years of Quiroga's life both he and the city turned their efforts toward repelling the excessive claims of Martín Cortés.

On December 9, 1556, Gonzalo Ruiz, acting as a regidor and citizen of Mexico City, also brought suit against Quiroga, claiming that the bishop was treating the pueblo as a thing of his own and that the Indians of the pueblo were living exempt from tribute. He called on the fiscal of the audiencia to take his side in the suit because it was a matter pertaining to royal income and jurisdiction. Quiroga, who was in Mexico City at this time and signed the answer given by his attorney, maintained that Ruiz could not make such a denunciation, acting as one of the populace, because he was already involved in a criminal suit with the Indians of Santa Fe for having commanded his son to force the Indians off a piece of their land. Quiroga presented in his defense a copy of certain items from his residencia--the charge relative to Santa Fe, his questions thirty-three through thirty-seven, the answers of the witnesses, and the sentence--together with various decrees of royal approval for Santa Fe. By this he wished to show that his work in Santa Fe had already been given a favorable judgment at the time of his residencia and should not now be brought back into court. He also maintained that the fiscal should rather take his side of the case by supporting what the

---

<sup>32</sup>Ibid., pp. 119-120.



of Santa Fe. Nothing was to be done at this time. The  
the last indication of an effort to do so was the  
Mexico during Santa Fe's life-time, although, as we shall see in a  
chapter, they returned to the land after a long absence. During the  
two years of Santa Fe's life-time he had the right to be called Santa Fe  
toward repelling the excessive claims of Santa Fe.

On December 3, 1850, Santa Fe, acting as a body and  
citizen of Mexico City, also did what Santa Fe did, or what Santa Fe  
the bishop was treating the people as a thing of the past and that the  
Indians of the people were having enough to do. He called on the  
fiscal of the audience to take his seat in the audience and to  
matter pertaining to royal justice and Santa Fe, Santa Fe, Santa Fe  
in Mexico City at this time and Santa Fe Santa Fe Santa Fe Santa Fe  
maintained that Santa Fe Santa Fe Santa Fe Santa Fe Santa Fe Santa Fe  
of the audience, Santa Fe Santa Fe Santa Fe Santa Fe Santa Fe Santa Fe  
the Indians of Santa Fe Santa Fe Santa Fe Santa Fe Santa Fe Santa Fe  
off a place of their own. Santa Fe Santa Fe Santa Fe Santa Fe Santa Fe  
certain items from his residence--but Santa Fe Santa Fe Santa Fe Santa Fe  
questions Santa Fe Santa Fe Santa Fe Santa Fe Santa Fe Santa Fe  
and the sentences--together with various documents of Santa Fe Santa Fe  
Santa Fe. By this he wished to show that Santa Fe Santa Fe Santa Fe  
ready been given a favorable judgment at the time of the residents and  
should not now be brought back into court. He also mentioned Santa Fe  
fiscal should rather take his seat in the case of Santa Fe Santa Fe



crown had commanded in regard to Santa Fe. He accused Ruiz of not being interested in doing good for the Indians but rather in wearing them down to the quick, forcing them to the mountains by his estancias of pigs and other livestock, and taking and occupying the lands which the King had granted them.

The fiscal, having read Quiroga's documents, maintained that the nature of the pueblo had changed since the time of Quiroga's residencia and that he could not continue to hold it when it had become a large, self-supporting pueblo of more than three hundred vecinos. The audiencia, however, on January 19, 1557, decreed that the case was not to be brought to trial. Ruiz and the fiscal appealed this decision to the Council of the Indies, where the case was presented by the fiscal of the Council on June 21, 1558. There is no indication as to what action was taken by the Council.<sup>33</sup>

As proof of his contention that Ruiz' denunciation of Santa Fe should not be accepted, Quiroga presented some petitions and Ruiz' interrogatory from the criminal suit between Ruiz and the Indians of Santa Fe. These documents show us one of several instances in which Spanish neighbors of Santa Fe attempted to chip off parts of the lands of the pueblo. They also demonstrate that there were some personal interests involved in the long-lasting differences between Santa Fe and the City of Mexico. The dispute concerned a hillock of land on the plains of Chapultepec where the lands of Gonzalo Ruiz bordered on those of Santa Fe. Ruiz claimed the piece of land was small, possibly "diez

---

<sup>33</sup>Quiroga vs. Gonzalo Ruiz.







fanegas de sembradura." Ruiz claimed to hold the land by reason of a grant made by Viceroy Mendoza to Pedro de Villegas in 1546. Villegas had sold the land to Diego Tristán, who in turn had sold it to Ruiz.<sup>34</sup> All three of these men were connected for many years with the cabildo of Mexico City, Villegas and Ruiz as regidores and Tristán as scribe.<sup>35</sup> In 1553, when Ruiz already claimed possession of the land and was cultivating it, the Indians complained to the audiencia that it belonged to them. Doctor Herrera, an oidor, was sent to examine the question and, according to Ruiz, he decided against the Indians and upbraided Father Pedro Hernández, their chaplain and attorney, for contending over such a small piece of ground when they had so much.<sup>36</sup>

Most of this had happened while Quiroga was absent from Mexico between 1547 and 1554.<sup>37</sup> When it came to his knowledge after his return he must have decided on a stronger stand. Ruiz claimed that one day in July of 1556, while his Negro slaves were plowing the piece of ground, many Indians from Santa Fe, together with two secular clergy and some servants of Quiroga, came and forced Ruiz' servants to leave. They brought their own oxen and plows and began plowing. When this happened Ruiz was sick in bed, but he sent his son Francisco to drive the Indians off the land. When the Indians refused to leave, Francisco had their oxen and plows taken from them and he put them in his own corrals. In

---

<sup>34</sup>Ibid.

<sup>35</sup>AC, II-VI, passim.

<sup>36</sup>Quiroga vs. Gonzalo Ruiz.

<sup>37</sup>León, Quiroga, p. 54.



# EXHIBIT

## CONTENTS

...the ...  
...grant made by ...  
...had sold the land to ...  
...All three of these ...  
...of Mexico City, ...  
...in 1555, when ...  
...voting it, the ...  
...them, Doctor ...  
...according to ...  
...Pedro ...  
...a small piece of ...  
...most of this ...  
...between 1547 and 1554 ...  
...he must have ...  
...July of 1555, ...  
...many Indians ...  
...servants of ...  
...brought their ...  
...this was also ...  
...off the land ...  
...oxen and plow ...

34  
1011

35  
AC, 11-VI, 10011

36  
Alfaro vs. Gomez

37  
Lyon, 10011



the accompanying disturbance, Ruiz struck one of the Indians with a rod because the Indian would not leave the land. When this Indian started to throw a stone at Ruiz, he struck him on the nose with his rod. Ruiz admitted this much in his own interrogatory, which undoubtedly minimized the amount of injury done to the Indians.

The Indians presented a complaint before the audiencia on the day after the fracas. They said that on the previous day, Friday, July 18, while they were plowing on lands within the boundary markers of Santa Fe, Francisco Ruiz, with the help of his Negroes, had maltreated, caned and wounded them, even drawing blood. He had carried off their oxen and plows and still had them. They requested the execution of civil and criminal penalties against the guilty parties and against those who had given them advice, favor, and help. Francisco Ruiz and the Negro slaves were arrested and imprisoned. The audiencia commanded Gonzalo Ruiz to return the oxen and plows to the Indians, which he did.<sup>38</sup>

This suit, again, is one of which we do not know the outcome, since it was not finished at the time when Quiroga had a copy made of parts of it. It does, however, show us some of the reasons why the cabildo would have liked to take the Indians of Santa Fe from Quiroga's protection and also the tenacity with which Quiroga maintained the rights of his pueblo down to the last corner of land.

Two other instances of cutting in on the pueblo lands occurred at this period. They make it appear that whoever was left in charge of Santa Fe while Quiroga was in Spain was not very careful about minding

---

<sup>38</sup>Quiroga vs. Gonzalo Ruiz.







his fences. Our information regarding these incidents is quite scanty.

On January 23, 1553, Bernaldino del Castillo was commissioned by the viceroy, Don Luis de Velasco, to check on a request by Luis de León Romano that he be granted a certain area along the boundary between Santa Fe and Cuyuaacán for an estancia of goats. Castillo was to take information from the Indians and others concerned to see if the grant would be prejudicial to anyone.<sup>39</sup> According to later testimony by Castillo, León Romano had already established his estancia on the lands in question when Velasco gave the commission. Juan Gallego, who accompanied Castillo as interpreter, and Bartolomé Alguacil, who was also commissioned by the viceroy to look into the matter, both stated that the estancia of goats was already on the land. Castillo and Alguacil reported to the viceroy that the estancia was on land of the hospital, and León Romano was forced to withdraw his animals toward Cuyuaacán.<sup>40</sup>

A decision in a similar case was given by Viceroy Velasco on September 4, 1556. Bartolomé Fontana had been granted a caballería of land which the Indians of Santa Fe claimed was within the boundaries of their pueblo. Antonio de Luna, alcalde mayor of the valley of Toluca, had made an inquiry into the dispute and had sent it, together with his own declaration, to the viceroy, who suspended the grant. Pedro Rodríguez Parrón, who had gone with the original group to mark off the grant of lands for Santa Fe, was commanded to check the boundary landmarks of the pueblo and see how much of Fontana's grant fell within its

---

<sup>39</sup>Quiroga vs. Martín Cortés, ff. 321v-322.

<sup>40</sup>Ibid., ff. 192, 193v, 194.



# NEW LAW

his father, the late...

In January 1955...

by the attorney, Don...

John...

...

information from the...

would be...

Castillo, John...

in question when...

pointed Castillo as...

commented by the...

the estate of...

reported to the...

and John...

A...

September 1, 1955...

of land which the...

of their...

had made an...

his own...

Rodriguez...

grant of land for...

rights of the...

...

...

...

...



boundaries.<sup>41</sup>

These constant disturbances of the peaceful operation of the pueblo must have been a source of continual headaches for Quiroga, but none of them was as great as that caused by the return to Mexico of the second Marqués del Valle, Don Martín Cortés. The young Cortés inherited all of his father's pride and ambition, but evinced little of his greatness, particularly in relation to the hospital-pueblo of Santa Fe. His arrival in Mexico City in late 1562 or early 1563 caused serious concern to many people in Mexico, because he carried with him a grant of Philip II which conceded to him jurisdiction over the twenty-two towns which had been claimed by his father for his marquisate, regardless of the number of vassals contained in them. Evidence of worry on the part of the cabildo is seen in the fact that on January 22, 1563, they discussed his arrival and instructed their attorney to request a copy of Cortés' grant and to pursue the matter as he should find it necessary.<sup>42</sup> The cause for the cabildo's concern went back as far as the early 1530's. On November 3, 1532, the Audiencia of Mexico had written to the Empress that a dispute had arisen between the City of Mexico and the Marqués del Valle over certain land which Nuño Guzmán and the regidores had set aside as ejido, or commons. Part of it lay within the bounds of Cuyuacán, which the Marqués held in encomienda, and he was cultivating certain lands that were included in the ejido. The city had asked the audiencia to command the Marqués not to occupy

---

<sup>41</sup>Quiroga vs. Martín Cortés, ff. 24-24v; León, Documentos, p. 3.

<sup>42</sup>AC, VII, 102.



These constant disturbances in the general situation in the  
public must have been a source of a national hardship, but  
none of them was as great as that caused by the return of the  
the second Marquis del Valle, Don Juan Antonio. The young Marquis  
inherited all of his father's lands and wealth, but was not  
of his greatness, especially in relation to the royal family of  
Spain. His arrival in Mexico in 1552 was a great event, and  
serious concern to all people in Mexico, because he carried with him  
a grant of Philip II which amounted to his jurisdiction over the two  
two towns which had been claimed by his father for his grant.  
regardless of the number of Spanish families in them. Alfonso II  
worry on the part of the public is seen in the fact that on January 20,  
1553, they discussed his arrival and mentioned his return to re-  
quest a copy of Cortés' grant and to present the matter to the Council.  
it necessary.<sup>42</sup> The reason for the public's concern was not  
as the early 1550's. In November 5, 1552, the Marquis of Mexico had  
written to the Council that a dispute had arisen between him and the  
Mexico and the Marquis del Valle over certain lands and other matters  
and the region had not made an agreement. The Council had  
within the bounds of Cortés, which the Marquis had an interest in.  
and he was unwilling certain lands that were included in the grant.  
The city had asked the authorities to examine the Marquis's request.

<sup>41</sup> Cortés vs. Marquis del Valle, 1552-53, Mexico, 1552-53, p. 5.

<sup>42</sup> AC, VII, 10.



those lands and to instruct the Indians who had their houses and fields in the ejido to leave the land and tear down their houses. The city had already torn down some houses. The Indians of Cuyucán had asked that their lands should not be taken from them, and the Marqués was defending their side of the dispute.<sup>43</sup> Little wonder, then, that the city was concerned when the young Marqués presented himself in New Spain with a royal cedula which granted him the towns of Cuyucán and Tacubaya, not merely as encomiendas but as part of his marquisate.<sup>44</sup> This was also reason for concern for Quiroga and his Indians of Santa Fe. The land that had been granted to Quiroga for his pueblo lay on the edge of land that was cultivated by the Indians of Cuyucán and may have been part of the originally disputed area.<sup>45</sup> Since the young Marqués contended that the jurisdiction of Cuyucán and Tacubaya included the ejidos of Mexico City and extended up to the houses of the city itself,<sup>46</sup> Quiroga's pueblo was definitely within disputed territory.

The Marqués was officially given possession of Cuyucán and Tacubaya on February 24, 1563.<sup>47</sup> For some time the significance of this act in relation to the pueblo of Santa Fe did not become evident. On July 17, 1563, however, the Marqués began to show his hand in Santa Fe.

<sup>43</sup>La audiencia de México a la Emperatriz, 3 de noviembre, 1532, ENE, II, 220.

<sup>44</sup>Quiroga vs. Martín Cortés, ff. 135-152y.

<sup>45</sup>León, Documentos, p. 2.

<sup>46</sup>AC, VII, 182.

<sup>47</sup>Quiroga vs. Martín Cortés, ff. 195-198y, 51-77.



those lands and to that end the Government had been  
in the effort to leave the land to the Indians. The  
had already been shown some lands. The Indians of the  
that their lands should not be taken from them, and the Government  
defending their title of the land. The Indians of the  
city was concerned that the young men of the city  
with a royal decree which granted the Indians the right  
not merely as an official part of the Government, but  
also reason for concern for the Indians and the Government.  
land that had been granted to the Indians of the city  
of land that was cultivated by the Indians of the city  
been part of the land which had been granted to the  
contained that the Indians of the city and the Government  
titles of the city and extended to the houses of the city.  
The Indians of the city were concerned that the Government  
The Indians were still in the possession of the land and  
Tombaza on February 24, 1965. The Indians of the city  
act in relation to the people of the city and the Government.  
July 17, 1965, however, the Indians of the city and the Government

43 The Government of the Republic of the Philippines, 1965.  
HRE, II, 220.

44 *Indians vs. United States*, 135 F.2d 1031.  
45 *Indians vs. United States*, p. 2.

46 *Indians vs. United States*, 135 F.2d 1031.

47 *Indians vs. United States*, 135 F.2d 1031.



He came to the pueblo with Alonso Núñez, scribe and notary public, and called before him Diego Quaotli and Pedro Eco, alguaciles of the pueblo, and through interpreters asked them by whose authority they carried their rods of justice. When they answered that they carried them by the authority of the viceroy and the royal audiencia, he told them that henceforth they should carry their rods of justice by the authority of the Marqués del Valle. This all took place in the presence of Bishop Quiroga.<sup>48</sup>

At this time the bishop, who was nearly ninety years old or older, was in Santa Fe convalescing from an illness.<sup>49</sup> But if the Marqués thought that for that reason he would be any less vigorous in the defense of the rights of the pueblo, he badly misjudged the character of his opponent. Quiroga immediately denied Cortés' contention that Santa Fe fell within the jurisdiction of Cuyucacán and Tacubaya. He said that if the Marqués had jurisdiction in the two towns, it was something of recent origin, whereas Santa Fe had maintained its own officers of justice for more than thirty years by authority of the audiencia of New Spain. They could not be deprived of this right merely by the action of the Marqués without being heard in court. The Marqués should go before the audiencia and seek justice there, and the hospital, the bishop, and the audiencia, which had given the rods of justice, would answer him, because at the time that Santa Fe's lands were granted it was verified that they were not within limits of Cortés' two towns.

---

<sup>48</sup>Ibid., f. 128v.

<sup>49</sup>Ibid., f. 12.



He came to the people with Alonso Ribera, scribe and notary public, and called before him Diego Gonzalez and Pedro de la Cruz, alguaciles of the people, and through intermediaries asked them by whose authority they carried their rods of justice. When they answered that they carried them by the authority of the viceroy and the royal authority, he told them that henceforth they should carry their rods of justice by the authority of the Marquis del Valle. This all took place in the presence of Bishop Gutierrez.<sup>48</sup>

At this time the bishop, who was nearly ninety years old or older, was in Santa Fe consulting from an illness.<sup>49</sup> But all the Marquis thought that for that reason he would be very less vigorous in the defense of the rights of the people, he badly misjudged the character of his opponent. Gutierrez immediately denied the contention that Santa Fe fell within the jurisdiction of Chusquea and Tachana. He said that if the Marquis had jurisdiction in the two towns, it was something of recent origin, whereas Santa Fe had maintained its own rights of justice for more than thirty years by authority of the authorities of New Spain. They could not be deprived of this right merely by the action of the Marquis without being heard in court. The Marquis should go before the audiencia and seek justice there, and the bishop, the bishop, and the audiencia, which had given the rods of justice, would answer him, because at the time that Santa Fe's lands were granted it was verified that they were not within limits of Cordoba, two towns.

<sup>48</sup> Ibid., I, 128v.

<sup>49</sup> Ibid., I, 12.



The Marqués answered that he was merely continuing the acts of possession of the towns granted him and that Quiroga was going against the express will of His Majesty. Then he called Pedro de San Lázaro, principal of the pueblo, and gave him a rod of justice which he was to carry by authority of the Marqués and subject to the jurisdiction of Cuyucán and Tacubaya. He did not take the rods from the alguaciles, out of respect for the viceroy and audiencia, and he would not do so until the question was decided by the audiencia.

Quiroga then protested against Cortés' rod of justice and said that he would not consent to it, even to the extent of breaking it. He promised to take the case to the audiencia so that they would rectify the violence that was being done to Santa Fe.<sup>50</sup>

Word of this head-on meeting between the Marqués and Quiroga soon reached Mexico City. On July 19 the cabildo discussed the differences that had arisen between the bishop and the Marqués and commanded their procurador mayor to enter the case and defend the rights of the city,<sup>51</sup> which had for so long contended that it should have the control of the pueblo.

Quiroga's lawyer, Juan de Salazar, presented the complaint of the bishop and the Indians of Santa Fe before the audiencia on July 21, 1563. With it he presented the various royal letters of protection for the pueblo and the mandate by which Viceroy Luis de Velasco had placed in office the most recent pair of alguacils in Santa Fe. He

<sup>50</sup> Ibid., ff. 128v-130v.

<sup>51</sup> AG, VII, 130.



The Marquis answered that he was ready to surrender the possession of the town, provided his and that of his wife against the express will of his family. When he returned to the Marquis, principal of the people, and was in a state of confusion, he was to carry by authority of the Marquis a subject to the Marquis of Cayenne and his wife. He did not know from the Marquis, out of respect for the Marquis, the Marquis, and he was not do so until the question was decided by the Marquis. Curiog then protested against the Marquis, and he would not consent to it, even to the point of making it. He promised to take the case to the Marquis, so that they would not be violent that was being done to the Marquis. Word of this news in meeting between the Marquis and his wife soon reached Mexico City. On July 19 the Marquis returned to the Marquis, Marquis that had been between the Marquis and the Marquis and Marquis their Marquis Marquis to enter the case and Marquis Marquis to the city, which had for so long contained that it should have the Marquis of the Marquis. Curiog's lawyer, Juan de la Cruz, presented the Marquis to the Marquis and the Marquis of the Marquis on July 19, 1563. With it he presented the Marquis to the Marquis of the Marquis for the Marquis and the Marquis of the Marquis between the Marquis placed in office the Marquis of the Marquis in Marquis.

<sup>50</sup> Ibid., II, 125-126.

<sup>51</sup> AC, VII, 130.



asked that the sanctions of the pueblo be announced by the crier so that no one could feign ignorance.<sup>52</sup>

But this action did not prevent the Marqués from proceeding in his efforts to assert control over Santa Fe. On July 27, 1563, Jorge Cerón Saavedra, alcalde mayor for the Marqués in Cuyucacán and Tacubaya, came along the highway with his rod of justice and entered Santa Fe with it until he came to the house of the bishop. Quiroga told him that he could not carry his rod of justice in Santa Fe and that they would break it for him if he pretended that he had jurisdiction here. Quiroga would give notice of the occurrence to the president and oidores, who would not allow him to make such innovations within the land and jurisdiction of His Majesty.

On the same day the alcalde mayor went to the inn of the hospital, which had been established by permission of Viceroy Mendoza in 1542. He attempted to exercise jurisdiction there also by commanding the alcaldes and regidores of the pueblo to provide necessary food for the travelers who would pass by that way. He had a copy of this provision attached to the door of the inn. This was immediately pulled down and sent, torn, to Viceroy Velasco, so that he would put an end to such harassments.<sup>53</sup>

But the Marqués continued to disturb the little pueblo in his attempt to establish his jurisdiction over it. On August 14, 1563, Juan de Salazar complained to the audiencia that the Marqués had given

<sup>52</sup>Quiroga vs. Martín Cortés, ff. 1-2v.

<sup>53</sup>Ibid., ff. 12-13v, 174v, 23-23v.



EXHIBIT  
CASE

10

asked that the navigation of the river be maintained in the state of  
that no one could take any action.  
But this action did not prevent the citizens from proceeding in  
his efforts to secure control over the river. In 1851, 1852, 1853,  
Gordon Searles, alderman mayor for the city, in person and through  
came along the highway with his rod of justice and sought to  
with it until he came to the house of the defendant. He then told him  
that he could not carry his rod of justice in front of his house and  
would break it for him if he pretended that he was a justice of the peace.  
Gordon would give notice of the occurrence to the friends and neighbors,  
who would not allow him to make such a show of force within the town and  
jurisdiction of his office.  
On the same day the alderman mayor went to the house of the defendant,  
which had been established by permission of the city council in 1851.  
He attempted to exercise jurisdiction there also by commanding the  
alderman and register of the peace to remove the defendant and his  
travelers who would pass by that way. He had a copy of this jurisdiction  
attached to the door of the house. This was immediately pulled down and  
sent, first, to Victor Searles, so that he would put it out to work  
harmless.  
But the mayor's command to destroy the little house in his  
attempt to establish his jurisdiction over the river was in 1851, 1852,  
that the mayor complained to the alderman that the mayor had given



Jorge Cerón a piece of land within the boundaries of Santa Fe in the place where Luis de León Romano had previously attempted to found an estancia. Cerón had plowed the land and was ready to plant when the Indians of Santa Fe found out about it and undid what Cerón had done.<sup>54</sup> On August 19, Cerón again entered Santa Fe, acting as alcalde mayor, and made an inquiry concerning a crime of certain Negroes, mulattoes, and Indians who were said to be there.<sup>55</sup> In Cuyucacán on August 24, Cortés presented a petition to Doctor Zorita, oidor of the audiencia, who had been sent to count Cortés' vassals. He reminded Zorita that the Indians of Santa Fe had been neglected in the count of his vassals and requested him to count them. Zorita determined that representatives of Santa Fe should be cited and an inquiry should be made. He came to Santa Fe on August 30 and notified some of the Indians of this decision. Bishop Quiroga came forward to answer him. By this time the suit between Quiroga and Martín Cortés was already under way in the audiencia, and Quiroga told Zorita that the suit over this dispute was already pending before court and witnesses were being heard in regard to it. Questions related to the dispute should be dealt with before the audiencia and not anywhere else.<sup>56</sup>

The suit now branched in two directions: the one treated the question of ownership of the piece of land granted by the Marqués to Jorge Cerón, while the other dealt with the more basic problem of the

---

<sup>54</sup>Ibid., ff. 122v-123v.

<sup>55</sup>Ibid., ff. 174v-175.

<sup>56</sup>Ibid., ff. 153v-154v.







jurisdiction over Santa Fe.<sup>57</sup> The question of ownership was a comparatively simple problem to solve. In early September witnesses were interrogated for the side of Santa Fe. No witnesses were presented for this dispute by the party of the Marqués. On December 1, 1563, the audiencia pronounced a decision in the case, commanding that the land remain in the possession of the Indians.

On the other hand, the question of jurisdiction was a much more thorny problem. Since it involved a conflict of royal jurisdiction with the private jurisdiction of the Marqués, the fiscal of the audiencia was given a copy of Quiroga's complaints and he entered the case on Quiroga's side to protect the rights of the crown. The party of Santa Fe and the fiscal requested that a summary examination of witnesses and an interim decision be made first so as to protect the rights of the litigants while the case went on to full proof. On August 25, 1563, the audiencia decreed that an examination of witnesses should be made within six days, the fiscal and the Marqués each to present five witnesses and Doctor Ceinos, oidor of the audiencia, to examine five witnesses de oficio. The time limit was later extended for four days.

The Marqués attempted to prove that before Quiroga built Santa Fe the area had been within the jurisdiction of Tacubaya and Cuyacán and had been occupied by Indians of those towns, whom Quiroga had forced to leave the land. He also maintained that after the founding of Santa Fe the alcaldes and alguaciles from the other two towns had enforced

---

<sup>57</sup> Since the following pages will be devoted to the course of the suit in general, citations of specific folios in the manuscript will not be given.







justice there, but his witnesses gave him little support on this point. He claimed, moreover, that since he had taken possession of Tacubaya and Cuyuacán his alcalde mayor had exercised jurisdiction in Santa Fe.

The fiscal attempted to show the jurisdiction of the audiencia over Santa Fe from the fact that Viceroy Mendoza and Velasco had always given mandates to the alguaciles of the pueblo and that lands in the area of Santa Fe had always been distributed by the oidores of the audiencia. Don Hernando Cortés had acknowledged that Santa Fe was in the district of Tacuba and as such it was commonly reputed. Customarily the subject towns in New Spain had alguaciles appointed from the head towns, but Santa Fe had always elected its own alguaciles and had never been given them by Tacubaya and Cuyuacán.

After the witnesses had been heard the audiencia gave an interim decision on September 12, 1563. They declared that until a final decision should be made in the principal cause and without prejudice to the rights of either party, they sanctioned the right of the fiscal and the Indians of Santa Fe to keep ministers of justice in the pueblo in spite of the acts of jurisdiction on the part of the Marqués.

Álvaro Ruiz, attorney for the Marqués, opened the second phase of the suit on January 11, 1564. This new phase was an attempt to gain jurisdiction over Santa Fe by legal action before the audiencia. On March 17, 1564, the audiencia decreed that a full examination of witnesses be made in the case. This time the efforts of the Marqués were concentrated on one point--to prove that Santa Fe was included within the boundaries of Cuyuacán and Tacubaya. For this purpose he called thirty-four witnesses, all but four of whom were elderly Indians. He asked them only



justice there, but his witness gave him little support on this point.

He claimed, moreover, that since he had been possessed of knowledge

and Goyasaca his alibi never had exercised jurisdiction in Santa Fe.

The fiscal attempted to show the jurisdiction of the audiencia

over Santa Fe from the fact that Viceroy Mendoza had always

given mandates to the alcaides of the pueblo and that lands in the

area of Santa Fe had always been distributed by the alcaides of the

audiencia. Don Hernando Cortés had acknowledged that Santa Fe was in

the district of Tordes and as such it was commonly reported. Customarily

the subject towns in New Spain had alcaides appointed from the hand

of Santa Fe had always elected its own alcaides and had never

been given them by Tordes and Goyasaca.

After the witnesses had been heard the audiencia gave an interim

decision on September 15, 1563. They decided that until a final decision

should be made in the principal cause and without prejudice to the rights

of either party, they sanctioned the right of the fiscal and the Indians

of Santa Fe to keep ministers of justice in the pueblo in spite of the

acts of jurisdiction on the part of the Marquis.

Alvaro Ruiz, attorney for the Marquis, opened the second phase

of the suit on January 15, 1564. This new phase was an attempt to gain

jurisdiction over Santa Fe by legal action before the audiencia. On

March 17, 1564, the audiencia decided that a full examination of witnesses

be made in the case. While the efforts of the Marquis were concentrated

on one point--to prove that Santa Fe was included within the boundaries

of Goyasaca and Tordes. For this purpose he called thirty-four wit-

nesses, all but four of whom were already Indians. He asked them only



four questions, all of them concerning the boundaries of Tacubaya and Cuyuacán and the fact that Santa Fe lay within them.

The party of the second part, Santa Fe and the fiscal, this time leveled a hard-hitting attack against the Marqués' grant itself. They maintained that Don Hernando Cortés had never held jurisdictional rights over Cuyuacán, Tacubaya, Toluca, and the Valley of Matalcingo but had held them merely as encomiendas, having renounced them as part of his marquisate in order to keep others that he preferred when he was limited to 23,000 vassals. Martín Cortés, they asserted, had gotten his grant under false pretenses, having made his holdings seem smaller than they actually were and leading the crown to believe that these encomienda towns were a part of his marquisate. This grant worked a hardship on the City of Mexico and was prejudicial to the five leagues of jurisdiction round about that belonged to the city and the audiencia, and it should be appealed. Moreover, this new grant was not intended to be prejudicial to a grant as long-standing as that which Quiroga held. Quiroga's lawyer also maintained that the area of Santa Fe had never been under the jurisdiction of the surrounding towns, even in pre-Spanish times, because it was a district of great cues, or temples, which were not subject to the jurisdiction of the towns.

This second phase of the suit was declared concluded on December 7, 1564, but the audiencia apparently never passed sentence on it. On October 5, 1565, the fiscal presented a royal cedula dated in Valladolid on May 6 of that year. It commanded that all suits arising from the grant to the Marqués del Valle should be submitted to the Council of the



four questions, all of them regarding the jurisdiction of the courts and  
Goyanes and the fact that he was not within the jurisdiction.  
The party of the second part, who is now the plaintiff, then  
presented a hard-fighting attack against the defendant's position. The  
maintained that Don Fernando Cortés had been a true possessor of the  
over Goyanes, Toluca, and the Valley of Mexico. The  
held them merely as usufructuaries, having no real title. The  
maintained in order to keep others from acquiring a title in the  
to 25,000 vassals. In this point, the defendant, who is now the  
under false pretenses, having made his title known to the  
actually were and feeling the crown to approve that these titles  
towns were a part of his jurisdiction. This is the second part of  
the City of Mexico and was maintained in the five leagues. Jurisdiction  
round about that belonged to the city and the defendant, and at this  
be appealed. Moreover, this was true and it was to be  
dicted to a grant as long-standing as that which had been made  
lawyer also maintained that the grant of 1562 was a true grant  
the jurisdiction of the municipality, even in the case of the  
because it was a grant of land, or rather, a grant of land  
fact to the jurisdiction of the town.  
This second grant in the suit was denied completely in 1562.  
1564, but the defendant apparently never made a counterclaim. It  
October 5, 1565, the fiscal presented a royal cedula dated in 1564  
on May 6 of that year. It commanded that all lands within the  
grant to the Encomienda of the Valley of Mexico.

LIBRARY  
UNIVERSITY OF CALIFORNIA



Indies. A notation on the first page of one of the copies of the suit between Quiroga and Martín Cortés in the Archive of the Indies indicates that the suit had not been followed up since it was received in 1567. Both of the principal litigants had more important things to attend to. Bishop Quiroga was called to his eternal reward early in 1565.<sup>58</sup> The Marqués allowed his ambitions to lead him too far and was disgraced in 1566 for his alleged complicity in the Cortés-Ávila conspiracy.<sup>59</sup>

---

<sup>58</sup>Moreno, p. 132.

<sup>59</sup>José Bravo Ugarte, Historia de México. Vol II: La Nueva España (3rd ed. rev. México, 1953), pp. 268-272.







## CHAPTER VI

### MICHOACÁN AND THE FOUNDING OF SANTA FE DE LA LAGUNA

Having followed the history of Santa Fe de México from its founding to the time of Quiroga's death, we will now turn our attention to the development of Quiroga's foundation in Michoacán during the same period. Since the history of Michoacán for the period of the conquest has been the subject of many inaccuracies, we will review it here on the basis of a study of contemporary documents.<sup>1</sup>

The area of Michoacán at the time of the arrival of the Spaniards in Mexico was an autonomous kingdom under the control of a tribe of Indians who were to become known to the Spaniards as the Tarascos. They were ruled by hereditary kings to whom they gave the honorific title of Cazonci. Under the leadership of a vigorous line of kings the Tarascans had managed to maintain independence against the military might of the Aztec empire and had on several occasions beaten back large forces sent from the Valley of Mexico to subdue them. The Cazonci was not only king

---

<sup>1</sup>For this summary of the history of the conquest in Michoacán, I will depend mainly on research done for my Master's thesis, for which I had access to a considerable amount of unpublished material from the archives of Spain and Mexico in the possession of Professor France V. Scholes. Cf. Fintan Warren, "The Conquest of Michoacán, 1521-1530" (unpublished Master's thesis, University of New Mexico, 1960). This work, which is being revised for publication, will constitute the source for the following few pages, except where otherwise noted.







but high-priest. As such his principal duty was to maintain a constant fire burning in honor of the chief god of the Tarascans, Curicaueri, a god of fire and the sun. The Cazonci was also one of the áxame, those whose office it was to extract the hearts of sacrificial victims and offer them to the sun. On some of the principal feasts the Cazonci and certain of his higher nobles would also do ritualistic dances in the flayed skins of the sacrificial victims. The Tarascans also practiced ritual drunkenness and blood-letting. Their marriage customs allowed polygyny and marriage within close degrees of relationship.

The kingdom of Michoacán at the time of the Spanish conquest comprised roughly the same area as the present Mexican State of Michoacán, although it apparently controlled very little of the area along the coast. The Tarascan monarchs had over the course of time accumulated considerable amounts of gold and silver, most of which was dedicated to the honor of their gods. The source of this wealth lay not within the central plateau area of Michoacán proper, which is a young volcanic area, but in the deep-cut gorges to the west and south of the plateau, where older, mineral-bearing strata were revealed.

When the Spaniards under Hernando Cortés appeared on the scene in Mexico and began to press demands against the Aztec empire, Montezuma sent ambassadors to Michoacán to request the aid of that kingdom. His embassies did not have any success, but in the course of the exchange deadly smallpox germs were carried to Michoacán, causing an epidemic which brought death to Zuangua, the ruling Cazonci, and to many of his principal advisers. Zuangua's son, Tzintzicha Tangaxoan, assumed the



but high-places. In the high-places of the land  
there hanging in a way of a tree, at the entrance of the house  
god of fire and the sun. The house was a square of 200 feet  
whose office it was to receive the food and to distribute it to the  
offer them to the gods. The house was a square of 200 feet  
entire of the house. The house was a square of 200 feet  
placed at the entrance of the house. The house was a square of 200 feet  
ritual instruments and ritual objects. The house was a square of 200 feet  
polygamy and marriage. The house was a square of 200 feet

The house of the god of fire and the sun. The house was a square of 200 feet  
occupied by the god of fire and the sun. The house was a square of 200 feet  
although it was a square of 200 feet. The house was a square of 200 feet  
cost. The house was a square of 200 feet. The house was a square of 200 feet  
constantly a square of 200 feet. The house was a square of 200 feet  
the house of the god of fire and the sun. The house was a square of 200 feet  
central place. The house was a square of 200 feet. The house was a square of 200 feet  
but in the house of the god of fire and the sun. The house was a square of 200 feet  
other, ritual objects. The house was a square of 200 feet

When the house of the god of fire and the sun. The house was a square of 200 feet  
in Mexico and home to the god of fire and the sun. The house was a square of 200 feet  
next immediate to the house of the god of fire and the sun. The house was a square of 200 feet  
embassy his not. The house was a square of 200 feet. The house was a square of 200 feet  
family smaller. The house was a square of 200 feet. The house was a square of 200 feet  
such brought. The house was a square of 200 feet. The house was a square of 200 feet  
ritual instruments. The house was a square of 200 feet. The house was a square of 200 feet



reins of power and, after the defeat of the Aztecs by the Spaniards, approached Cortés through ambassadors, offering peaceful submission to the king of Spain.

A few Spaniards had already begun to enter Michoacán. The first one was a Spanish soldier named Porrillas, who ventured into some of the frontier towns while searching for provisions for Cortés' army. The first official contact was made by a group of three Spaniards headed by Antonio Caicedo, who were sent by Cortés to the Cazonci soon after the fall of Tenochtitlán. They visited the native king in his capital of Tzintzuntzan and returned to Cortés with gifts, which were turned over to the royal treasurer on November 18, 1521.

In the summer of 1522 a large expedition of Spaniards, under the leadership of Captain Cristóbal de Olid, was sent to Michoacán to occupy and colonize the area. Although the Cazonci had prepared a large force for resisting the Spaniards, he capitulated peacefully and Olid's forces entered the Tarascan capital on the feast of Santiago, July 25, 1522.<sup>2</sup> The Spaniards obtained a considerable amount of booty from the royal treasures, but they did not find the Michoacán area satisfactory for colonization. In the late fall they were ordered by Cortés to leave the area and either return to Mexico City or proceed to Zacatula. The force split up, part returning to Mexico City with Olid, the rest going to Zacatula under Juan Rodríguez de Villafuerte.

---

<sup>2</sup>Dos probanzas de los méritos y servicios de Cristóbal de Melda: Testimonio de Pedro de Vargas (1544) y Juan Muñoz (1560) conquistadores de Michoacán, AGI, Patronato, leg. 63, ramo 18.



...of power and, after the fall of the ...  
approached Cortés through ...  
the king of Spain.

A few Spaniards had already begun to ...  
one was a Spanish soldier named ...  
the first town which ...  
The first official ...  
by ...  
the fall of ...  
of ...  
over to the ...  
In the ...  
the leadership of ...  
occupy and ...  
force for ...  
forces entered the ...  
1522.<sup>2</sup> The ...  
royal treasurer, but ...  
for ...  
the area and either ...  
force split up, part ...  
to ...

---

<sup>2</sup> ...  
...  
de ...



The Cazonci remained friendly toward the Spaniards, at least externally, and visited Cortés on occasion. On the first of these visits Cortés informed him that he should stop receiving tribute from the towns of his kingdom, since they were to be distributed among the Spaniards as encomiendas. Preparatory to the distribution Antonio de Carvajal was sent into Michoacán to list the pueblos and indicate the size of each. He was occupied in this survey during late 1523<sup>3</sup> and early 1524. After he returned to Mexico the first grants of encomienda were made, mainly during the summer of 1524. Cortés took for himself Tzintzuntzan, the capital, and several other rich encomiendas.

Because of disturbed political conditions in New Spain during the middle and late 1520's, the history of the encomiendas in Michoacán presents a very confused picture. Encomiendas distributed by one group in power would be canceled and redistributed by those who followed them. Out of this arose many lawsuits, some of which continued during the whole lifetime of the encomenderos. Some of these lawsuits which the author has examined in Sevilla indicate that some pueblos changed hands as much as three times during the first ten years after they had been distributed.

The encomiendas in Michoacán were of interest to the Spaniards at this time mainly as sources of provisions for the mines in the lower elevations. They supplied maize, beans, and other necessities for the gangs of Indian slaves who worked the gold-pannings for the Spaniards.

---

<sup>3</sup>Francisco de Villegas, vecino de México, con Juan Infante de la misma vecindad, sobre el pueblo de Capaquero, 1541, AGI, Justicia, leg. 138.







They also supplied the bearers for these provisions at this time when the human back was still the most easily obtained cargo-carrier in New Spain.

Because of heavy pressures on the natives by the encomenderos and the unsettled relationship between the Spaniards and the Indian nobility, the 1520's were a period of constant unrest in Michoacán. There were undoubtedly all too many cases of brutality on the part of Spanish gold-seekers. The Indians retaliated with the same kind of treatment. Punitive expeditions were sent out by the government in Mexico City to bring the Indians into submission. Pedro Sánchez Farfán was active in the Motín, or far western section of Michoacán, probably during 1526. In 1528 Bachiller Juan de Ortega led a fairly large military expedition into Michoacán to bring the Indians into submission. He estimated that sixty to seventy Spaniards had been killed by the Indians in Michoacán. He brought a degree of quiet to the region by severity toward both Spanish and Indian offenders and by regulating the burden of tribute that could be placed on the Indians.<sup>4</sup>

The mission program had in the meantime gotten under way in Michoacán. Probably in June 1525 the Cazonci sent the sons of some of his principales to study with the Franciscans in Mexico City. Sometime the same year he personally requested and was granted missionaries for his people. He himself was baptized while in Mexico City or soon after returning to Michoacán. Accompanying him on his return to his native

---

<sup>4</sup>Alonso de Mata, vecino de la Ciudad de los Angeles, con el Bachiller Juan Ortega y Francisco de Santa Cruz sobre derecho a una encomienda de indios, 1541, AGI, Justicia, leg. 135, no. 3.







land were two Franciscan friars, Fray Martín de Jesús de la Coruña and Fray Antonio Ortiz, with perhaps one or two other companions. Fray Martín became the leader of the missionary effort in the Michoacán-Jalisco area. Fray Antonio does not seem to have stayed in Michoacán for very long. These first missionaries began their work in a humble church and friary which were constructed for them at the command of the Cazonci. The natives were attracted by the poor and humble way of life of the friars. They saw a great contrast between the lives of the friars and those of the conquistadores and colonists. On the other hand, the native priestly caste saw in the friars a threat to their own position. They spread malicious rumors about the friars and the Christian religion; apparently only the favor of the Cazonci prevented the friars from suffering physical harm.

The progress of the missionaries was slow. At first they were very few in number and were able to work only in the area of Lake Pátzcuaro. The response to their work was so poor that they twice deserted Michoacán. Gradually, however, their numbers increased, as some of the other truly great figures of the mission history of Michoacán began to arrive. In late 1527 or early 1528 Fray Martín brought with him to Michoacán Fray Ángel de Salcedo, Fray Jerónimo, Fray Juan de Badía or Badillo, and Fray Juan de Padilla. Also toward the end of the 1520's, came Fray Juan de San Miguel, one of the greatest names in the spread of Christianity in the Tarascan area.

The religious chroniclers of Michoacán have given the impression that paganism and idolatry withered away almost immediately upon contact



land were two Franciscan friars, Fray Juan de la Cruz and Fray Antonio Gilis, with perhaps one or two other companions. Fray Martin became the leader of the missionary effort in the Michoacán-  
lained area. Fray Antonio Gilis and two other friars stayed in Michoacán  
for very long. These first missionaries began their work in a hostile  
country and many which were considered for them at the command of the  
Casco. The natives were attracted by the poor and humble way of life  
of the friars. They saw a great contrast between the lives of the friars  
and those of the conquistadores and colonists. On the other hand, the  
native priests came now to the friars a threat to their own position.  
They spread malicious rumors about the friars and the Christian religion.  
Apparently only the favor of the Casco prevented the friars from en-  
tering physical harm.

The progress of the missionaries was slow. At first they were  
very few in number and were able to work only in the area of Lake  
Pátzcuaro. The response to their work was so poor that they twice  
deserted Michoacán. Gradually, however, their numbers increased, as  
some of the other truly great figures of the Mexican history of Michoacán  
began to arrive. In late 1527 or early 1528 Fray Martín brought with him  
to Michoacán Fray Juan de Salcedo, Fray Juan de Padilla, Fray Juan de Padilla  
or Padilla, and Fray Juan de Padilla. Also toward the end of the 1520's,  
came Fray Juan de San Miguel, one of the greatest names in the history  
of Christianity in the Mexican area.

The religious character of Michoacán has given the impression  
that paganism and idolatry were almost immediately upon contact



with the missionaries. But the contemporary documents do not support this idea. Adoration of the ancient gods continued in secret, apparently with the consent and co-operation of the Cazonci. There were even instances of human sacrifice, in some of which the victims were Spaniards.

When Nuño Beltrán de Guzmán came to Mexico as presidente of the First Audiencia in December 1528, it was the sign for the beginning of disturbing changes in Michoacán. Guzmán and the audiencia sent to Michoacán as justicia, or chief official of the civil government, an ex-muleteer named Antonio de Godoy. In May 1529 Godoy was commanded to take away Cortés' encomiendas of Tzintzuntzan and Tamazula, the latter a rich silver-mining area. Nominally these towns were placed under authority of the crown, but in reality Guzmán used them for his own silver-mining projects. The encomienda towns of some of Cortés' friends were likewise taken from them at this time.

The Cazonci was also to feel the weight of Guzmán's hand. Soon after his arrival in Mexico the presidente summoned all of the important caciques to his presence and demanded that they bring him gifts. The Cazonci was among those summoned, and since he was probably the most important native leader still living, Guzmán expected much of him. When the Tarascan leader did not bring enough treasure to satisfy the greedy Spaniard, Guzmán commanded that he be kept under arrest in Mexico City until sufficient gold and silver should be brought. At sometime during the summer of 1529 Guzmán was satisfied, and the Cazonci was allowed to return to his own land. But toward the end of August Guzmán once more commanded that the Tarascan chief be brought to him. At this time Guzmán



with the missionaries, but the missionaries were not  
this idea. Attraction of the missionaries was not  
with the company and no part of the missionaries  
stages of human evolution, in fact of which the missionaries  
When this mission was founded in 1850, it was the intention of  
first missionaries in Mexico in 1850, it was the intention of  
the mission changed in 1850, it was the intention of  
Nichols as James, or chief official of the new government, in  
ex-missionary named Nichols as chief. In 1850, Nichols was  
to take away Nichols' mission of evangelization and education, the  
for a rich silver-mining mine. Nichols' mine was a silver mine  
authority of the mine, but in reality, Nichols was the  
silver-mining professor. The missionaries found a mine of silver  
were likewise taken from the mine.  
The mission was to find the silver of Nichols' mine. Nichols  
after his arrival in Mexico the missionaries were all of the  
assigned to his mission and found that Nichols' mine was  
Nichols was a man of great energy and was very rich in silver  
important native Indian tribe. Nichols' mine was a silver mine  
the Tarascan leader and his wife were very rich in silver  
Spain, Nichols was a man of great energy and was very rich in silver  
well sufficient gold and silver should be found. At a certain point  
the summer of 1850 Nichols was arrested, and the missionaries were  
return to his own land. Nichols' mine was a silver mine  
recommended that the missionaries should be prepared to find the silver mine



was planning an expedition to the northwest, which would take him through Michoacán. He kept the Cazonci prisoner during the four months prior to his expedition, but he sent Don Pedro, the Cazonci's chief advisor, back to Michoacán to oversee the provisioning of his slaves in the mines, to prepare armor of the Indian style, and to collect gold and silver.

Shortly before Christmas 1529 Guzmán's expedition left Mexico City to undertake the conquest of the New Galicia area. The Cazonci accompanied him under guard. Their first lengthy stop was in Michoacán, where the army laid over for several days in Tzintzuntzan for provisions. The gold and silver that Don Pedro had collected was taken to Guzmán who was quite dissatisfied with the amount and upbraided Don Pedro about it.<sup>5</sup>

In Tzintzuntzan accusations were brought against the Cazonci by Francisco de Villegas, encomendero of Uruapan, to the effect that the Indian king had interfered with the free operation of the encomiendas and that he had been responsible for the murder of many Spaniards. Guzmán made a summary investigation of these charges in Tzintzuntzan before moving on to the north. He continued the trial on the banks of the Río Lerma at a ford somewhere north of the pueblo of Puruándiro. Here the Cazonci was accused of having relapsed into idolatry and paganism after his baptism, even to the extent of dancing in the flayed skins

---

<sup>5</sup>El Gobernador Nuño de Guzmán con el fiscal sobre cantidad de 6000 pesos en que fue condenado por el presidente y oidores de México por otros tantos que, sin orden de Su Majestad, había o suponía haber gastado en la conquista de los Teules Chichimecas, 1531, AGI, Justicia, leg. 186, no. 4.



was planning an expedition to the westward, to the ...  
Michigan. He kept the ...  
his expedition, but he ...  
back to Michigan to ...  
himself, to prepare ...  
silver.

Shortly before ...  
City to undertake the ...  
accompanied his ...  
where the ...  
The gold and silver ...  
who were quite ...  
about 11.

In ...  
by ...  
Indian king had ...  
and that he had ...  
Garcia made a ...  
before moving on to the north. ...  
the ...  
Here the ...  
him after his baptism, even to the extent of ...

At ...  
6000 ...  
for other ...  
parties on ...  
leg. 186, ...

COPIED



of Spaniards, and of preparing an ambush for Guzmán's army in the area ahead of them. The main witness against the Cazonci was Don Pedro, his closest adviser. The Cazonci and his close associates were subjected to severe torture by which Guzmán obtained sufficient evidence to condemn the Tarascan leader. On February 14, 1530, the Cazonci was condemned to death by burning, and on the same day he was strangled and burned.<sup>6</sup> Although chroniclers of a later period accused Guzmán of having made a holocaust of the principal Tarascan leaders, contemporary records indicate that only the Cazonci was killed.

Guzmán moved on to the north, leaving Michoacán in a state of turmoil. He took with him large numbers of Tarascans as warriors and burden-bearers.<sup>7</sup> He continued for some time to hold as prisoners the most important lords of Michoacán, probably using them as hostages against any possible uprising after the Cazonci's execution.

But even after the coming of the Second Audiencia, with all its good intentions, a stable peace was slow in coming to Michoacán. The Tarascan capital, called variously Tzintzuntzan, Uchichila, and City of Michoacán, had been made into a corregimiento by the First Audiencia and constituted one of the richest towns that the crown held. As such it was a rich plum for those who could influence the crown for appointment as corregidor. The first of these was Don Pedro de Arellano who brought

---

<sup>6</sup> France V. Scholes and Eleanor B. Adams (eds.), Proceso contra Tzintzicha Tangaxoan, el Caltzontzin, formado por Nuño de Guzmán, año de 1530 (México, 1952).

<sup>7</sup> José Bravo Ugarte, Historia de México, Vol. II: La Nueva España (3rd ed. rev., México, 1953), p. 50.







before the audiencia a royal cedula instructing them to give him one of the best corregimientos in the land. They placed him in charge of the capital of Michoacán. Early in 1532, however, they received complaints that he had tortured three Indians in order to find the hiding place of certain gold and jewels which the Cazonci had left to his sons.<sup>8</sup> On February 15, 1532, they appointed Licenciado Cristóbal de Benavente as corregidor of the city of Uchichila and alcalde mayor of the province of Michoacán and of the mines of Colima and Zacatula and the others bordering on the province of Michoacán. He was also to make an enquiry as to how Arellano had conducted himself in office. On February 22, 1532, Bishop Zumárraga, who was leaving for Spain, commissioned Benavente to take his place as protector of the Indians and to conduct an ecclesiastical visitation in the area over which he was alcalde.<sup>9</sup> Arellano was placed under arrest and a suit was brought against him by the Indians of Michoacán and the fiscal.<sup>10</sup> The gold which was eventually recovered from Arellano was sequestered by the audiencia and sent to the Casa de Contratación in Sevilla to await the decision of the king concerning what was to be done with it.<sup>11</sup>

---

<sup>8</sup> Audiencia de México a la Emperatriz, México, 19 de abril, 1532, ENE, II, 117.

<sup>9</sup> AGI, Justicia, leg. 260.

<sup>10</sup> El fiscal contra Don Pedro de Arellano sobre el oro que tomó a los indios de Michoacán y demás cosas de que fué acusado, 1532, AGI, Justicia, leg. 187, ramo 1.

<sup>11</sup> La Audiencia de México a su Majestad, México, 5 de agosto, 1533, ENE, III, 110.



before the ...  
 the best ...  
 capital of ...  
 that he had ...  
 of ...  
 On February 15, 1915, ...  
 an ...  
 of ...  
 ...  
 as to how ...  
 1915, Bishop ...  
 to take his place as ...  
 ...  
 placed under ...  
 of ...  
 from ...  
 ...  
 that was to be done with it.

<sup>8</sup> ...  
 ...  
<sup>9</sup> ...  
<sup>10</sup> ...  
<sup>11</sup> ...  
 1915, ...



In their letter of April 19, 1532, in which the audiencia told the Empress of the appointment of Benavente, they were not far from the opinion that it would be good for one of the oidores to go to visit Michoacán.<sup>12</sup> By November 3, 1532, they had decided that Licenciado Quiroga should make a visitation of Michoacán because of the rush to the mines there and the many maltreatments of the natives.<sup>13</sup> But Quiroga did not get away from Mexico City for several months. Very possibly he did not wish to desert his little pueblo of Santa Fe de México which he had begun to establish only in the late summer of 1532. He left for Michoacán sometime during the early summer of 1533, probably in late June. A new crisis had arisen in Michoacán at this time. Licenciado Juan Álvarez de Castañeda, who had been appointed corregidor of Michoacán by a royal cedula, had forced the lord and some of the natives of Michoacán to reveal to him some of their treasures, which he then took for himself. Quiroga was instructed to make an enquiry into the matter. On August 5, 1533, the audiencia reported to the Emperor that Quiroga had written them, reporting that he had arrived in Michoacán and had begun to look into the accusations against Castañeda.<sup>14</sup> He found that the corregidor had taken some precious metal and jewels from the Indians but not nearly in the amount that had been reported. It had been said that

---

<sup>12</sup>La Audiencia de México a la Emperatriz, México, 19 de abril, 1532, ENE, II, 118.

<sup>13</sup>La Audiencia de México a su Majestad, México, 3 de noviembre, 1532, ENE, II, 218.

<sup>14</sup>La Audiencia de México a su Majestad, México, 5 de agosto, 1533, ENE, III, 110-111.







Castañeda took 400,000 pesos from the Indians,<sup>15</sup> but when Quiroga had the claims of the Indians assessed by a third party, they came to only 1,437 pesos de oro de ley perfecta.<sup>16</sup> At Quiroga's command Castañeda repaid to the Indians 1,223 pesos which were found in his possession and that of Francisco de Mañana, which left only 214 pesos not accounted for.<sup>17</sup> The Indians and the fiscal brought a suit against Castañeda, a copy of which was later sent to Spain, but the copy was not found in the Archive of the Indies.<sup>18</sup>

We do not know very much about Quiroga's activities in Michoacán in detail. We know that he tried to organize the Spanish residents of Michoacán into a formal town near the Tarascan capital. He appointed a complete slate of *alcaldes* and *regidores* for the town, which consisted of about twenty-five *vecinos*. The *vecinos* were given lots for houses; some of them built houses there, while others bought houses from the Indians. At first Quiroga wanted to call the town Granada but Bishop Fuenleal later wrote him that it should be called Uchichila Michoacán. On September 3, 1534, the *cabildo* of Mexico City took testimony to prove that Granada was a failure, founded in a nearly uninhabitable place, and

---

<sup>15</sup>La Audiencia de México a su Majestad, México, 19 de agosto, 1533, AGI, México, leg. 3177.

<sup>16</sup>Fe del oro que se halló que había tomado el Licenciado Castañeda, Uchichila, 5 de agosto, 1533, AGI, México, leg. 3177.

<sup>17</sup>Ibid.

<sup>18</sup>Los procesos que están en poder de mí Bernaldarias en esta villa de Madrid hasta hoy once de diciembre de 1534 años: Tercero envoltorio. . . . Otro de los indios de Michoacán y el fiscal con el Licenciado Castañeda, AGI, Indiferente General, leg. 856. Nearly all the other procesos mentioned in this list are now found in AGI, Justicia.







that it should not be refounded because it would draw citizens away from México and weaken it. Except for Gregorio Gallego, a vecino of Michoacán, who disagreed with the cabildo on every point, the witnesses in general supported the city's contention.<sup>19</sup> We do not know what influence this opposition had on Quiroga's little town. In 1538, when Quiroga as bishop wished to move his cathedral from Tzintzuntzan to Pátzcuaro, he used almost the same arguments against the site in Tzintzuntzan as the cabildo of Mexico had in 1534.<sup>20</sup>

One other small item that has come down to us from Quiroga's early activity in Michoacán is an enquiry concerning the existence of copper in that area. On October 15 and 19, 1533, he took testimony in the city of Michoacán from both Spanish and Indian witnesses. This testimony was later sent to the Council of the Indies.<sup>21</sup>

But Quiroga left his impression on Michoacán most deeply by his dealings with the natives. It was friction between Indians and Spaniards that had caused most of the difficulty in that region, and Quiroga recognized that basic to the problem were the religious differences between the conquered and the conquerors. Alonso de Paz, who accompanied Quiroga

<sup>19</sup>Información hecha por el ayuntamiento de la ciudad de México para probar que estaba despoblada la ciudad de Granada en Michoacán y que no convenía sacar españoles de México para repoblarla, México, 3 de septiembre, 1534, *ENE*, III, 155-172.

<sup>20</sup>"Información hecha a pedimento del obispo para que conste del mal asiento y disposición del lugar donde estaba la iglesia primera y que conste de lo contrario en Pátzcuaro," León, *Vida*, p. 212.

<sup>21</sup>Cierta información sobre lo del cobre de la Nueva España, Michoacán, 1533, AGI, Indiferente General, leg. 1204.







as scribe, testified in 1536 that Quiroga told the Indians that it was because of their idols that they were maltreated and persecuted and that if they were constantly being bothered by those who would take their gold and jewels from them, this was also because of their idols.<sup>22</sup> The truth of this statement is seen in the fact that Pedro de Arellano had defended his actions by arguing that the gold and jewels that he took were offerings to idols.<sup>23</sup> Quiroga summoned the principales together and undertook to instruct them in their obligations to God and King. Francisco Castilleja, who served Quiroga as Tarascan interpreter, asserted that at times the oidor would talk to the Indians from morning till night, teaching them that there was one God in heaven and the Emperor on earth and that God rewarded the good and punished the evil.<sup>24</sup> Quiroga used his best efforts to convince the Indians that they should give up their sacrifices, idolatries, and drunkenness and should turn from the pursuit of the devil to the service of God.<sup>25</sup> He also told them that they must have only one wife and not many as they had had previously.<sup>26</sup> The Franciscan missionaries had attained only limited success in their efforts to put these same ideas across to the Indians and many forbidden practices had continued in secret in spite of the

---

<sup>22</sup> Aguayo Spencer, p. 436.

<sup>23</sup> El fiscal contra Don Pedro de Arellano, 1532, AGI, Justicia, leg. 187, ramo 1.

<sup>24</sup> Aguayo Spencer, p. 422.

<sup>25</sup> Ibid., p. 430.

<sup>26</sup> Ibid., p. 429.







various types of coercion that the friars had used.<sup>27</sup> But the Indians listened to Quiroga, who must have had a knack of reaching their hearts. Many of the witnesses in his residencia mentioned that the Indians brought him their idols of stone or wood so that he could destroy them.<sup>28</sup> They gave up their multiple wives and began to marry with only one woman.<sup>29</sup> Andrés Suárez, who went with Quiroga to Michoacán as alguacil named by the audiencia, stated that Don Pedro, who was Indian governor of Michoacán at the time, had three or four concubines in his house. When one of them complained to Quiroga about this, he convinced the governor that he should rid himself of them and marry the one who had brought the complaint to him.<sup>30</sup>

When Quiroga saw how well his talks to the Indians were received, he proposed to them that if they wished him to have a hospital built for them after the model of the one he had built in Santa Fe de México, he would endeavor to lay the groundwork for it and bring it to completion. Seeing all that he had done and the evidence of his love for them, they immediately caught up the idea and began looking for a place where he might build the hospital. They showed him a barrio on Lake Pátzcuaro that was suitable and then began the construction.<sup>31</sup> The formal founding of the hospital must have taken place on September 15, 1533, since

---

<sup>27</sup>Ibid., pp. 428-429.

<sup>28</sup>Ibid., pp. 423, 425-426, 429, 431.

<sup>29</sup>Ibid., p. 423.

<sup>30</sup>Ibid., p. 450.

<sup>31</sup>Ibid., p. 430.







Quiroga says in the Ordinances that the first large crosses were raised in each of the hospitals on the feast of the Exaltation of the Cross, although in different years.<sup>32</sup>

The purpose and nature of Santa Fe de la Laguna, as the foundation in Michoacán came to be called, were the same as those of Santa Fe de México. According to Fray Francisco de Bolonia, Quiroga explained to the Indians that it was to be a place where those who had gone astray could find refuge, where the poor could go, where the orphans would receive protection, and where the divine offices would be said.<sup>33</sup> Alonso de Ávalos, an Indian and important Tarascan interpreter, testified in Quiroga's residencia that in Santa Fe the poor were given shelter, clothing, and food.<sup>34</sup> Quiroga enforced certain norms of decent dress in the pueblo. The men wore mantles to cover their nakedness. The married women were obliged to dress differently from the girls and to have their heads covered.<sup>35</sup>

Santa Fe de la Laguna, like that of México, was intended as a center for religious instruction, which was the reason behind its name. Juan Seciliano uses the word "monesterio" in regard to Santa Fe, and the Tarascan, Alonso de Ávalos, asserted that the Indians who lived there

<sup>32</sup> Quiroga, "Ordenanzas," pp. 263-264.

<sup>33</sup> Aguayo Spencer, p. 444.

<sup>34</sup> RSA, f. 428. This part of Ávalos' statement is not contained in the printed version in Aguayo Spencer.

<sup>35</sup> Aguayo Spencer, pp. 447, 422.







gave the appearance of monks and nuns.<sup>36</sup> They came together to pray in the morning, at vespers, and at dusk, and knew how to say the Ave Maria, Pater Noster, Creed, and Salve Regina, and could sing the hours of the Office.<sup>37</sup> Fray Francisco de Bolonia said he had seen more than a thousand souls come together on Friday nights, summoned by the bell, and they scourged themselves for an hour. During the Holy Week of 1536 another Spaniard had come to the friar with his eyes full of tears, saying that the Indians of the hospital had scourged themselves to the extent that the blood had formed pools.<sup>38</sup> This makes one wonder if they had not brought the blood-letting practices of their paganism over into their Christianity.

As the good fame of Santa Fe de la Laguna spread through the region, it was frequented not only by the Tarascans but also by the Chichimecs. These primitive Indians, who had never been conquered by the Spaniards, came to the hospital with their wives and children. Francisco Castilleja reported that the day had come in which more than five hundred Chichimecs of the area had become Christians in the hospital.<sup>39</sup>

Most of the early development of Santa Fe de la Laguna took place in Quiroga's absence, which he considered an evidence that the success of the pueblo came from the work of God and from the goodness of the

---

<sup>36</sup>Ibid., pp. 415, 428.

<sup>37</sup>Ibid., pp. 429, 447.

<sup>38</sup>Ibid., p. 445.

<sup>39</sup>Ibid., p. 424.







work itself rather than from the efforts of the temporal minister.<sup>40</sup>

We do not know exactly when Quiroga returned from Michoacán, but he was back in Mexico City by March 19, 1534, when he made his requerimiento to the Indian principales who complained about not being paid for work on Santa Fe de México. Expressions in that document seem to indicate that he had only recently returned.<sup>41</sup>

There has been considerable dispute between Franciscan historians of Michoacán and devotees of Quiroga as to whether Quiroga or Fray Juan de San Miguel was the first to found hospitals in Michoacán. Fray Pablo Beaumont in his Crónica de Michoacán, written in the eighteenth century, studied the question, although with a heavy prejudice in favor of his confrere. He succeeded in proving only that Fray Juan was in the area before Quiroga, without adducing any solid proof to show that he founded hospitals before Quiroga.<sup>42</sup> The present author can add no new light to this dispute which seems to him to be fruitless. The hospital-pueblos founded by Quiroga were something of considerably different nature from the hospital-infirmaries which are the glory of Juan de San Miguel. We can but join Fray Juan in his words of praise for Quiroga "that the said Licenciado is worthy to be favored by God, and may God give him his reward."<sup>43</sup>

<sup>40</sup>RSA, f. 63v.

<sup>41</sup>Ibid., ff. 73v-77v.

<sup>42</sup>Pablo Beaumont, Crónica de Michoacán (3 vols., México, 1932), III, 141-166.

<sup>43</sup>Aguayo Spencer, p. 446.







## CHAPTER VII

### DEVELOPMENT AND OPPOSITION

#### IN SANTA FE DE LA LAGUNA

Royal aid and support were quick in coming to the pueblo-hospital in Michoacán. Quiroga must have sent a report back to Spain while he was still in Michoacán or very soon after returning to Mexico City, because already on September 28, 1534, a royal cedula of approval and favor was signed by the Emperor in Palencia, Spain. The cedula, which was directed to the corregidor of the city of Michoacán, stated that the king had been informed that Don Pedro, an Indian, and other persons native to the province (no mention is made of Quiroga) had built a hospital in which the poor people of the province were given shelter and protection. Because this was a matter pleasing to God, the corregidor was commanded to favor the people who were engaged in the construction of the hospital and to see to it that such a good and holy work should not be left uncompleted.<sup>1</sup> Quiroga undoubtedly felt the need of this cedula for the hospital in Michoacán, since he did not think that he would be there to watch after the work himself.

But an even greater sign of royal favor for Quiroga's work came in 1536 when he was named bishop of the newly erected diocese of Michoacán. The appointment of a bishop for Michoacán had been in the offing for

---

<sup>1</sup>RSA, ff. 69v-70.







quite some time. In a letter of May 2, 1532, the crown instructed the audiencia to discuss the division of New Spain into dioceses. Apparently the audiencia had already considered the point, since they mentioned in a letter of July 5, 1532, that they sent a description and proposed division of the land. The Council awaited the return of the Emperor to Spain in 1533 before consulting with him about the suggested new dioceses. In a consulta of November 8, 1533, they proposed the establishment of the additional dioceses for New Spain. The proposal was acceptable to the Emperor and on February 20, 1534, he issued a cedula sanctioning the creation of the new dioceses.

On December 19, 1533, the Council had proposed Fray Luis de Fuensalida to the Emperor for the position of first bishop of Michoacán, a suggestion which the Emperor found satisfactory. But Fray Luis firmly declined the honor, as the Emperor was informed in a letter of September 7, 1535, from Bishop Ramírez Fuenleal, president of the audiencia of Mexico. By December 5, 1535, the attention of the Council had become centered on Vasco de Quiroga as an apt candidate for the new post; on that date they suggested his name to the Emperor.<sup>2</sup> The reasons that the Council gave in support of Quiroga's appointment were that "there is a good report of his life and example and he is much inclined to the conversion and good treatment of the Indians and to their instruction in the matters of our holy faith on which he has spent a large part of the salary that Your Majesty has commanded to be given to him."<sup>3</sup>

---

<sup>2</sup>Méndez Arceo, "Contribución a la historia de Don Vasco de Quiroga," pp. 63-65.

<sup>3</sup>Ibid., p. 67.







Once the suggestion of the Council had been approved by the Emperor, he communicated his wishes to his ambassador in Rome, the Conde de Cifuentes. The latter proposed the matter to the Pope and obtained authorization for the Cardinal Protector of Castile, Hercules Gonzaga, Cardinal of Mantua, to carry the proposal before a secret consistory. The consistorial acts indicate that on August 18, 1536, the Cardinal of Mantua requested the erection of the diocese of Michoacán and the creation of Vasco de Quiroga as its first bishop. There is some confusion of date here, since the papal bulls which put this decision into effect were dated August 8. An apostolic brief of December 9, 1536, authorized Quiroga to be consecrated by one bishop assisted by two ecclesiastical dignitaries instead of the prescribed assistant bishops. By March 2, 1537, the papal bulls had arrived in Spain and must have been dispatched to Mexico soon afterwards.<sup>4</sup>

For the time being, Quiroga, now designated as bishop-elect, continued to act as oidor in the audiencia of New Spain. On November 30, 1537, he was appointed by Viceroy Mendoza to count the number of vassals living in the towns that the crown had granted to the Marqués del Valle.<sup>5</sup> He was occupied in this work on December 20, 1537, when Bishop Zumárraga wrote to the royal secretary, Juan de Sámano.<sup>6</sup>

The summer of 1538, however, saw Quiroga once more in Michoacán, taking possession of his diocese and making arrangements to set up his

<sup>4</sup>Ibid., pp. 197-199.

<sup>5</sup>AGI, Patronato, leg. 16, no. 2, ramo 44.

<sup>6</sup>Carta de Fray Juan de Zumárraga a Juan de Sámano, 20 de diciembre, 1537, Cartas de Indias, p. 168.







episcopal see there.<sup>7</sup> He also took advantage of this opportunity to establish his pueblo of Santa Fe on a more stable footing. Although Don Pedro, the Indian governor of Michoacán, and the principales of the area around Lake Pátzcuaro had designated a certain piece of land for the use of the hospital when it was established, apparently no formal document of possession had been drawn up. In June 1538 Quiroga took proper steps to remedy the legal vulnerability of this situation. On June 21, 1538, Don Pedro and his wife Doña Inez appeared before Quiroga and the scribe Francisco Troche in the City of Michoacán and stated through an interpreter that they wished to make out a legal paper, for which they requested Quiroga to interpose his authority as oidor. The bishop-elect gave them permission and faculty to execute the legal paper, at which he was prepared to be present. The Tarascan governor and his wife then made out a bill of sale of certain lands to the pueblo and hospital of Santa Fe and to Don Vasco de Quiroga in its name as the builder of the pueblo-hospital. The somewhat confusing description of the land is as follows:

Las tierras que son en Pazaquareo en la vega que son en termino de esta ciudad y han por linderos de la una parte el peñol que está como vamos de esta dicha ciudad a Santa Fe y por la otra el pueblo de Petzaceanzaro que va por la dicha estancia a dar a esta ciudad, y por la otra parte entrada de la laguna de esta dicha ciudad hasta dar en el dicho camino.

For this land they received from the hospital and from Quiroga in its name the price of 150 pesos.<sup>8</sup>

---

<sup>7</sup>Moreno, p. 53.

<sup>8</sup>Quiroga vs. Infante, 1540, ff. 152v-155.







Six days later, on June 27, 1538, in the pueblo and hospital of Santa Fe, Quiroga called Don Pedro before him and told him of the royal cedula of November 13, 1535, by which Her Majesty had commanded that unused land near the hospitals be set aside for the maintenance and support of those who lived in them.<sup>9</sup> He explained that by command of Viceroy Mendoza the cedula had already been fulfilled in regard to Santa Fe de México and reminded the Indian governor that it still had to be carried out for Santa Fe de Michoacán. Don Pedro had already set aside some lands for the pueblo but they were not extensive and the pueblo had need of many more in order to keep up its good work. Quiroga requested Don Pedro to outline the other lands that could be set aside for the pueblo so that the viceroy could put the cedula into force.

Don Pedro immediately indicated that the lands which he had set aside for the pueblo were:

Las que están y se contienen y encierran desde la palma que está cerca de la laguna en el llano que se dice Chupiquaro en el camino real que va a Tzácapu y a Colima derecho a dar al monte hasta la cumbre aguas vertientes hasta la laguna y desde allí por la orilla de la laguna hasta en derecho del peñol de Cozintal que está en el llano de la otra parte de Santa Fe que se llama el peñol Capaquareo que está cabe el camino real que va de Santa Fe a Michoacán; y de allí pasando por el dicho peñol a dar derecho a un ciprés que está en una cordillera que está junto al valle que se dice Petazaquaro hasta dar derecho a la cumbre y sierra del monte que pasa y va sobre Santa Fe; todo lo que se contiene y encierra desde la cumbre y montes aguas vertientes hasta la laguna y desde el dicho peñol hasta la dicha palma sin perjuicio de otras cualesquier tierras que otra persona allí haya y tenga al presente y tenían y poseían al tiempo que el dicho Don Pedro dió las dichas tierras al dicho hospital por baldías y desamparadas; las cuales después acá los vecinos y moradores del dicho hospital siempre han tenido y poseído y tienen y poseen con los árboles que en ellas hay.

---

<sup>9</sup>León, Documentos, pp. 1-2.







Thus it appears that the lands described here were those that had originally been set aside for Santa Fe.

The Tarascan governor went on to describe the lands which of his own free will he had sold to the pueblo for 150 pesos. It appears, however, that by agreement he was to retain the use of these lands for himself until the time of his death, except insofar as he should wish to allow the hospital to work them during his lifetime. He said that he sold these lands to the hospital to help it in its need, because he had helped to found the hospital and was devoted to it and because there were no other good lands in the neighborhood which could be given to it.<sup>10</sup>

Quiroga apparently now felt satisfied that title to the lands for his hospital was clear and he did not press to obtain the express grant from the viceroy. He was without doubt busily occupied in organizing his diocese and in preparing for his consecration as bishop. As he later indicated in his testament, when he came to New Spain as oidor he had not received any ecclesiastical ordination whatsoever. Therefore, he had to be ordained through the whole series of four minor and three major orders before he could be consecrated bishop. His consecration took place at sometime between November 26, 1538, and January 14, 1539, as is indicated by the acts of the ecclesiastical cabildo of Mexico City. On the earlier date he is referred to as bishop-elect; on the latter, as bishop. The general consensus of authors indicates that he was consecrated during December 1538, although the document of his conse-

---

<sup>10</sup> Quiroga vs. Infante, 1540, ff. 152y-155.







cration has not come to light.<sup>11</sup>

In the meantime a threat to the very existence of Santa Fe de la Laguna had presented itself. An ambitious encomendero named Juan Infante had for several years claimed that he held a legitimate claim to several pueblos along the shores and on the islands of Lake Pátzcuaro, a group of pueblos that became known as the barrios de la laguna. One of these pueblos was Guayameo, where Quiroga had established his hospital. Infante's claim to the pueblos was very suspect. He based it on a cedula of encomienda, of which he was never able to produce anything more authoritative than a simple notarized copy made by the scribe Rodrigo Baeza. According to this copy, Infante had been granted more than twenty-five towns in Michoacán by a cedula issued by Alonso de Estrada, governor of New Spain, on October 22, 1528. According to the cedula these pueblos were passed on to Infante as Juan de Solís had held them before his death.<sup>12</sup> But there was no substantial evidence to show that Juan de Solís had ever held any pueblos in Michoacán other than that of Comanja,<sup>13</sup> which was only the first of those listed in Infante's cedula.

It is something of a mystery as to how Infante came to have all of the other pueblos listed in his cedula--whether by an exaggerated statement to Estrada regarding the holdings of Solís in Michoacán, or

<sup>11</sup>Icazbalceta, Zumárraga, I, 159-160.

<sup>12</sup>Carta ejecutoria de Juan Infante, Valladolid, 18 de septiembre, 1538, Quiroga vs. Infante, 1540, ff. 2-5.

<sup>13</sup>Tasación de la provincia de Michoacán por el Bachiller Juan de Ortega, 1528, Quiroga vs. Infante, 1540, f. 962.







by writing them in himself before having the cedula copied, or by some other means. But whatever means he used, he was at first able to convince the authorities in Mexico City of the validity of his claims.

On July 20, 1531, the audiencia commanded Don Pedro de Arellano, corregidor of Michoacán, to give Infante possession of the pueblos contained in his cedula. Arellano immediately objected that some of the pueblos belonged to the city of Uchichila (Michoacán) and for this reason he refused to fulfill the command of the audiencia. Infante went back to the audiencia, and on October 30, 1531, they issued another command to Arellano that he turn the pueblos over to Infante. Arellano again at first hesitated, claiming he needed to assert the rights of the Indians of the city, but on November 14, 1531, he instructed the principales of the city not to take tribute from Infante's towns.

When Licenciado Cristóbal de Benavente was sent to Michoacán as corregidor and visitador in 1532, the Indians complained about what had been done. On March 8, 1532, Benavente commanded that an enquiry be made into the way in which Infante had gained control of the lands of the Indians. Benavente came to the conclusion that Infante had never been in actual possession of the barrios de la laguna and that the city of Michoacán had always controlled them. For this reason he suspended the effects of Infante's cedula of encomienda in regard to the barrios. Infante appealed the case before the audiencia, where his attorney presented Benavente's proceso on April 26, 1532. The audiencia set up Bachiller Juan de Ortega as fiscal for the case to defend the rights of the crown over the barrios. The definitive sentence of the audiencia







was given on April 6, 1535, when they decided against Infante and in favor of the fiscal. Infante, however, was not to be stopped. He took the case personally to the Council of the Indies, and on August 1, 1538, the Council handed down a definitive sentence in favor of Infante, reversing that of the audiencia.<sup>14</sup>

While Infante was in Spain appealing his case, he married Catalina Samaniego, who, according to a later claim by Fiscal Benavente in Mexico, was a relative of Juan de Sámano, the royal secretary.<sup>15</sup> In 1554 Infante gave power of attorney to Francisco de Samaniego, secretary of the audiencia and chancillería of Valladolid in Spain, possibly also a relative of his wife.<sup>16</sup> Thus, there is some reason to believe that the decision in favor of Infante depended more on influence than on the merits of the case. But, no matter how he came by it, Infante returned to Mexico in the summer of 1539 armed with a carta ejecutoria, a letter issued by the Council, summarizing the case, embodying the decision which had been given, and commanding that the decision be carried out.

On June 30, 1539, Infante presented his carta ejecutoria before the audiencia and asked that it be put into effect. The audiencia gave obedience to the letter with the proper signs of respect and decreed

<sup>14</sup>Carta ejecutoria, 1 de agosto, 1538, Quiroga vs. Infante, 1540, ff. 5-16.

<sup>15</sup>Probanza de los méritos y servicios de Juan Infante, México, 1576, AGI, Patronato, leg. 74, no. 2, ramo 5; Quiroga vs. Infante, 1540, f. 1219.

<sup>16</sup>[El fiscal] con Juan Infante, vecino de México, sobre derecho a los pueblos de la Laguna de Michoacán que le estaban encomendados, 1554, AGI, Justicia, leg. 203, no. 2.







that someone should be appointed to go to Michoacán to give Infante the physical possession of the pueblos contained in his cedula. The news of this decision was carried quickly to Michoacán and brought a prompt reply from that province, for on July 14, 1539, Álvaro Ruiz appeared before the audiencia in the name of Don Pedro and the Indians of the City of Michoacán to petition against the letter and the decision to enforce it. He claimed, as had been done frequently before, that the barrios de la laguna belonged to the City of Michoacán and could not by right be given to Infante. The audiencia replied that it could not consider such an appeal and that the appellants should take their case before His Majesty. On August 15, 1539, the audiencia issued an appointment of Andrés Juárez, alguacil of the court, to go to Michoacán with Infante as executor to put his letter into effect.<sup>17</sup> He was to be accompanied by Sancho López de Agurto as receptor to make a record of the proceedings. Infante presented this appointment to López on September 16, 1539, and López in turn officially notified Juárez of it the next day.<sup>18</sup>

On September 19, 1539, Álvaro Ruiz again appeared before the audiencia to present a lengthy petition, requesting that the letter be given formal obedience but that its effect be suspended pending an appeal to His Majesty. By this time Bishop Quiroga had also officially entered the case, and the petition was submitted in his name and that of the Indians of Michoacán. Quiroga's interests in this struggle went further

---

<sup>17</sup> Quiroga vs. Infante, 1540. When we are merely following the course of the suit, folio numbers will not be given.

<sup>18</sup> Quiroga vs. Infante, 1539.



that someone should be appointed to go to Michoacán to give the  
 physical possession of the land to the Indians. The name of  
 this decision was carried quickly to Michoacán and brought a great relief  
 from that province, for on July 14, 1539, Alvaro Ruiz appeared before  
 the audience in the name of Don Pedro and the Indians of the City of  
 Michoacán to petition against the latter and the decision to enforce  
 it. He claimed, as had been done frequently before, that the land  
 as in Laguna belonged to the City of Michoacán and could not be taken  
 be given to Indians. The audience replied that it could not consider  
 such an appeal and that the appellants should take their case before  
 His Majesty. On August 12, 1539, the audience issued an appointment of  
 Andrés Juárez, alcaide of the court, to go to Michoacán with letters  
 as executor to put his letter into effect.<sup>17</sup> He was to be accompanied  
 by Doncho López de Aguayo as interpreter to make a record of the proceed-  
 ings. Juárez presented this appointment to López on September 12,  
 1539, and López in turn officially notified Juárez at the next day.<sup>18</sup>  
 On September 19, 1539, Alvaro Ruiz again appeared before the  
 audience to present a lengthy petition, repeating that the latter is  
 given formal obedience but that its effect be suspended pending an appeal  
 to His Majesty. By this time Bishop Enrique had also officially entered  
 the case, and the petition was admitted in his name and that of the  
 Indians of Michoacán. Enrique's intervention in the struggle went further

<sup>17</sup> Enrique vs. Juárez, 1539. When we are nearly following the  
 course of the suit, this matter will not be given.

<sup>18</sup> Enrique vs. Juárez, 1539.



than the question of harm to his pueblo of Santa Fe. The petition shows that he was concerned lest, in losing the barrios de la laguna, the City of Michoacán would not be able to support the Spanish and Indian population which was befitting his newly erected diocesan see. Not only would the Indians of the city lose the farms and fields which they cultivated in the barrios, but they would have to support an unproportionately heavy burden of tribute, since the barrios had always contributed to these payments. Moreover, the petition stated, this damage was being done to the city by a decision based on falsified documents and without having heard the party which was being injured. Ruiz requested that Infante, who was preparing to leave Mexico City to go to Michoacán, be commanded to stay. But the audiencia merely ordered Infante to appoint an attorney. On September 25 Ruiz demanded an answer to his petition. The reply of the audiencia was that, in spite of the claims of the bishop and natives of the City of Michoacán, the carta ejecutoria should be carried out but that in enforcing it the appeal of the other party was to be granted.<sup>19</sup> By this time Infante had already left Mexico City and was drawing near to his destination.<sup>20</sup>

In the meantime Quiroga had not been idle in regard to Santa Fe. Infante's return to Mexico with a favorable judgment regarding his possession of Guayameo made it imperative that Quiroga obtain viceregal sanction for the landholdings of his pueblo. The cedula of 1535 had never been carried out by a formal grant of land by the viceroy, even

---

<sup>19</sup>Quiroga vs. Infante, 1540

<sup>20</sup>Quiroga vs. Infante, 1539.







though the lands for the grant had been clearly determined. On July 23, 1539, Viceroy Mendoza finally issued the grant which officially confirmed the pueblo in the possession of the lands that had been designated a year earlier by Don Pedro. There is no indication in the document as to what petitions had preceded its issuance, but since it followed by only three weeks the presentation of Infante's carta ejecutoria, it seems to indicate an effort on Quiroga's part to strengthen his position as much as possible before Infante came to take possession of his towns.

Quiroga's agent, Pedro de Yepes, showed great haste in getting to Santa Fe to put the grant into effect. On August 1, 1539, only nine days after the grant was made, he was already in Santa Fe carrying out the formal acts of possession before Estaban González, alguacil, and Francisco Troche, scribe. He was especially insistent that the scribe record that his acts of possession--throwing rocks from one part to another, gathering fodder, and walking through the land--went without contradiction by any third party.

Apparently Quiroga did not find these acts of possession entirely satisfactory. On September 26 Pedro de Yepes was again in Santa Fe to take formal possession of the lands once more. He stated that the previous acts had been carried out in the presence of Esteban González, alguacil, because no other official of justice could be found in the City of Michoacán. Now, "adding right to right and possession to possession," he came with a mandamiento of Pedro de Monguía, alcalde ordinario of the City of Michoacán, which instructed the alguacil to give possession of the lands specified in the grant to the Indians of



through the lands for the grant and then clearly determined that on July 25, 1858, Viceroy, through the grant, had officially confirmed the people in the possession of the lands that had been designated a year earlier by the people. There is no indication in the documents as to what petition had preceded the grant, as since it followed only three weeks the presentation of the petition, it seems to indicate an effort on Viceroy's part to strengthen his position as much as possible before the grant came to take possession of his lands. Viceroy's agent, Pedro de Yegor, received the grant on August 1, 1858, only nine days after the grant was made. He was already in Santa Fe carrying out the formal acts of possession but the Indian Council, which was especially interested in the matter, record that his acts of possession--throwing rocks from one part to another, gathering fodder, and walking through the land--were without consideration by any third party. Apparently Viceroy did not find these acts of possession entirely satisfactory. On September 26 Pedro de Yegor was again in Santa Fe to take formal possession of the lands once more. He stated that the previous acts had been carried out in the presence of Indian Council, although, because no other official of justice could be found in the City of Michoacán. Now, "adding right to right and possession to possession," he came with a mandamiento of Pedro de Yegor, which was an ordinance of the City of Michoacán, which instructed the officials to give possession of the lands specified in the grant to the Indians.



Santa Fe. The mandamiento had been made out in Pátzcuaro on the previous day. Yepes, acting in the name of the pueblo, presented the document to Alonso de Peñaranda, alguacil of the City of Michoacán, from whom Yepes once more received possession of the lands in the name of the Indians.<sup>21</sup>

It seems that Quiroga himself was in Santa Fe on this occasion, although his name does not appear in the document of possession. Infante later claimed that Quiroga had gone to Santa Fe accompanied by Don Pedro and many Spaniards and Indians, suspecting that Infante would begin his acts of possession there. Alonso Vázquez Gallego, a servant of Infante's, was sent to Santa Fe ahead of the rest of the party. According to Infante, Vázquez found the town on the point of war, with the feared Chichimecs to whom Quiroga had given hospitality there, ready to start shooting their arrows. Vázquez was told to leave Santa Fe if he did not wish to be killed. Francisco Pilo, one of Infante's witnesses, stated that Quiroga had sent an Indian to summon all the canoes on the lake to take him and all the people who were in Pátzcuaro to Santa Fe.<sup>22</sup> Probably this was all a last-minute effort on Quiroga's part to repair his fences before Infante's arrival. The acts of possession before Peñaranda took place on September 26;<sup>23</sup> Infante arrived in Michoacán on September 27.<sup>24</sup>

---

<sup>21</sup>Quiroga vs. Infante, 1540.

<sup>22</sup>Quiroga vs. Infante, 1539.

<sup>23</sup>Quiroga vs. Infante, 1540.

<sup>24</sup>Quiroga vs. Infante, 1539. The next several pages of text will be extracted from this document.







With Infante's arrival in Michoacán the stage was set for a dramatic confrontation between the two principal parties in the case-- Infante, confident in the decision of the Council and the support of the audiencia, and Quiroga, determined that, no matter what the price, the barrios de la laguna would not be given to Infante. The news that the audiencia had decided to enforce the decision of the Council seems to have put Quiroga into a state of restrained fury. As we mentioned previously, he was a man of very strong convictions who could not easily be brought to give up a stand once taken. In the case of Infante's pueblos he had taken part in the decision of the audiencia which had deprived Infante of them. Now, moreover, he had become bishop of the city which would suffer serious harm if the pueblos were given to Infante. He saw, furthermore, a threat of destruction hanging over Santa Fe de la Laguna, the apple of his eye, on which he pinned great hope in his work for the salvation of the Indians.

In the interrogatory which Infante later made up concerning what happened in Michoacán, he claimed that Quiroga had stated publicly that he wanted nothing more than to be a hermit and that he would cause a serious disturbance in this affair so that he would lose his diocese and could take up the eremitical life. Such a negative attitude does not sound typical of Quiroga, and Infante's witnesses did not give him much support in regard to it. What they did generally agree on was that Quiroga had expressed his firm determination not to allow Infante to take possession of the pueblos and had said that he would rather lose his bishopric than see Infante gain the possession. Antonio de Godoy



With Tolstoy's arrival, the situation was no longer the same.

drastic consequences between the two points of view.

himself, according to the reading of the Council and the committee.

the audience, and Tolstoy, determined to do, a better thing than

the picture he is in, and would not be able to do better.

the audience had decided to accept the reading of the Council and

to have the picture read a scene of unexplained death.

previously, it was a scene of death and death.

be brought to give the scene a new meaning.

problem he had taken part in the reading of the Council and

deprived himself of the scene. He, however, had taken part in the

city which could only be read as a scene of death.

himself. He was, however, a scene of death and death.

himself to be in the scene, the picture was a scene of death.

hope in his work for the audience of the Council.

In the meantime, the picture was a scene of death.

happened in the scene, he found that the picture was a scene of death.

he wanted nothing more than to be a scene of death and death.

serious disturbance in the scene and the picture was a scene of death.

and could take up the scene. He, however, was a scene of death.

not seem typical of the scene, and the picture was a scene of death.

much support in regard to the scene, and the picture was a scene of death.

himself had expressed his hope in his work for the audience.

then possession of the picture and the picture was a scene of death.

his picture was a scene of death and death.



testified that he had often heard the bishop say that, if the pueblos were given to Infante, he would leave his diocese and go with a pilgrim's staff to His Majesty to ask that his bishopric be taken from him. According to Diego de Godoy many Spaniards had tried to dissuade Quiroga from resisting the royal decree, but he had said he would die in defense of the possession.

Quiroga undoubtedly used every means in his power to prevent Infante from gaining control of the barrios de la laguna. He talked to the citizens of the City of Michoacán both in public and in private to enlist them on his side. According to Infante he appeared in the cabildo of the city and convinced them that they also should resist the execution of Infante's carta. Alonso Jiménez Madero, one of the regidores of the city, stated that, although he had been absent from the cabildo at the time of Quiroga's appearance, the other regidores had told him that the bishop had appeared in the cabildo and gotten them to discuss the resistance that they should put up against Infante's actions.

As soon as Infante arrived in Michoacán on September 27 accompanied by his executor and receptor, the active opposition to his intended possession began to take shape. Pedro de Yepes and Antonio de Castro came before the executor and presented a petition against the fulfillment of Infante's carta in the name of the Church, City, and Indians of Michoacán. The letters of attorney that they presented indicated the length of time over which this opposition had been developing. There was one from the Indian principales of the city dated July 11, one from Quiroga dated July 25, one from Quiroga and the Indians of Santa Fe







dated September 27, and one from the cabildo of the city dated August 15. They were all made out specifically for the purpose of opposing Infante.

On September 30 Andrés Juárez, the executor, replied to the petition presented on September 27. He stated that he was merely an executor and not a judge and that he was under obligation to put the carta ejecutoria into effect. He then exhibited the carta to Quiroga and his party. After this Infante presented a requerimiento to Juárez. He complained of Quiroga's efforts to impede him, accusing him of stirring up the Spaniards and Indians to resistance, even to the point of war. He asked that the penalties contained in the carta be imposed. Juárez replied that he was ready to place Infante in possession of the pueblos and that he would act on the penalties in due time as the audiencia should command. Infante replied that on the next day, Wednesday, October 1, they would go to his pueblos.

Now Antonio de Castro and Pedro de Yepes presented a requerimiento. They asserted that the executor was not obliged to act but should take the case back to the audiencia to which they had already appealed. They refused to take any responsibility for any disturbances and riots that might arise if an attempt were made to enforce the carta. Juárez again replied that his powers extended only to the execution of Infante's letter and not to the hearing of cases. He added that, if disturbances, riots, or killings should result, it would be the responsibility of Quiroga, the attorneys, and their companions.

Quiroga now appeared personally before the executor and asked to hear Infante's accusations against him. Having heard them, he



dated September 27, and one from the capital of the city dated August 15. They were all made out specifically for the purpose of opposing the same.

On September 30 Antonio de Castro, the executor, replied to the petition presented on September 27. He stated that he was sorry the executor was not a judge and that he was under obligation to put the same before the court into effect. He then admitted the error to which he and his party. After this latter a presentation was made to the court of Castro's efforts to appease him, looking him of setting up the standards and lights to resistance, even to the point of war. He asked that the petition contained in the same be ignored. Castro replied that he was sorry to place himself in possession of the petition and that he would not on the petition in the time as the executor should command. Castro replied that on the next day, Wednesday, September 1, they would go to his prison.

Now Antonio de Castro and Pedro de Luna presented a request. They asserted that the executor was not obliged to act but should take the case back to the audience to which they had already appeared. They refused to take any responsibility for any statements and to state that might arise if an attempt were made to enforce the order. Castro again replied that his power extended only to the execution of the court's order and not to the hearing of cases. He added that, if the audience, or killing should result, it would be the responsibility of Castro, the attorneys, and their co-parties. Castro now appeared personally before the executor and asked to hear Castro's accusations against him. Having heard them, he



replied that he did not exact service of the Indians but that he served them and tried to help them and to defend and protect them with justice. He was fulfilling the office of a good shepherd in this way and by placing himself in the midst of disturbances in order to prevent them. He claimed that everything he had done in the case had been done in order to avoid disturbances and to prevent Infante and the executor from exceeding their rights and causing tumults, thus risking the loss of their own lives and the lives of many others. In time of such tumults he should not leave the side of the executor in spite of the requests that had been made and, even if the executor wished him to leave, he would not do so because the Indians were so stirred up over the harm that was being done them without their being heard. The executor and receptor knew, he said, of the sincere intention with which he was accustomed to act in the service of God and His Majesty.

Infante, speaking next, repeated his accusations and said that he would say more about the injuries he had always received from Quiroga but that he would reserve such a statement for a competent judge. Quiroga, in defense of his position, presented the regal and papal documents which gave the title and privileges of a city to Michoacán and raised it to the dignity of the see of a diocese.

Later the same day Infante made a new requerimiento before the receptor. He complained that on the previous night Quiroga and Don Pedro had sent out Indian alguaciles and had forced the people to leave the pueblos that were to be given to him. He claimed that they were holding these people prisoners and that some had been killed and others







injured in forcing them to leave their pueblos. López de Agurto replied that he had no authority to take testimony and that, if Infante wanted this done, he would have to go before a competent judge. Juárez also said that he was not competent to take judicial testimony but that, if Infante could show him where the Indians were imprisoned, he would carry out the commands of the audiencia. Infante then took the executor to see an Indian named Toribio, principal of Quisquaro, who was in the convento de San Francisco. The Indian told them that by command of Don Francisco, brother of Don Pedro, many alguaciles had gone out to the pueblos to summon the principales to bring roses and attend Mass on the feast of Saint Michael, which was on the previous day. He had heard that they had all gone to Pátzcuaro, which was being refounded and that there they were building some walls. He did not know whether or not they had returned to their pueblos. This answer took all the force out of Infante's complaint.

Early the next day, October 1, 1539, Infante asked the receptor and executor to proceed with the granting of possession of his pueblos. They left the city immediately, taking the road that led to Santa Fe. They had not gone far along the road before they were overtaken by Bishop Quiroga riding a mule, accompanied by several Spaniards on horseback carrying lances. With them were three clerics, two of them priests, also on horseback and wearing swords at their sides.

When the two groups had come together, they stopped and Infante presented a written requerimiento to the receptor. He requested that Quiroga and company be commanded to leave and said that any disturbances







would be Quiroga's fault. Quiroga replied, also in writing, that he was present to see if the possession could be given without tumult and riot and he saw that it could not be done without great danger, disturbance, riot, and deaths. As pastor and prelate of the diocese he did not have to allow this to happen until the viceroy and audiencia were informed and made a provision regarding it. The executor commanded the eleven laymen to return to their houses under penalty of 50,000 maravedís. He threatened the three clerics with the loss of temporalities and told them he would proceed against them as seculars since they came bearing arms.

The reply of the clerics, De Tapia, Padre Jiménez, and Padre Zurita, was that they were going with their lord, the bishop, and that the executor was not their judge. Moreover, it meant nothing to them to lose the temporalities. Three of the laymen, Juan de Castilleja, Arias Girón, and Diego de Ribera, elected to turn back. Antonio de Castro and Pedro de Yepes said that they were going along as parties to the dispute and they appealed the executor's command. Alonso de Toledo also appealed the command, stating that he was public scribe of the city and was going along to make a record. The others, Alonso de Medina, Francisco Troche, De Pineda, Morales Cantor, and Pedro Riano, stated that they were accompanying their lord, the bishop, because they lived with him and had to go with him wherever he went; they also appealed the command.

López de Agurto, in his personal written report of the incident, said that after the Spaniards had been commanded to turn back he had







spoken many things to the bishop in the interest of peace. The bishop had replied that they would have to cut him in two and make pieces out of him before they could give the possession to Infante, because, as he had already alleged, it was not given according to the laws of the realm.

The two groups now rode on for some distance together. As they were going along, the Spaniards told Infante that beside a certain cross on the road ahead 6,000 Indians were waiting and that they were going to kill him alone. The receptor wrote in his report that already before they left the city he had been told that if Infante dared to take possession of the pueblos there was a large number of armed Tarascans and Chichimecs waiting beside a cross outside the city in order to kill him. According to his information the bishop was to embrace the receptor during the attack because he did not want anyone but Infante to be killed. The receptor observed that, before they left the city and after they met along the road, the bishop was very fearful and disturbed, telling him that he (the receptor) knew the terms of the law and the case as well as the contradictions and dangers that were expected, and that he should not give cause for the natives to commit crimes which might result in deaths, because the possession was already taken. The receptor warned the bishop to give careful consideration to what he was commanded to do by His Majesty and the audiencia in accordance with their commission, which he would carry out even in the face of greater perils. If anything happened it would be the responsibility of the bishop and his companions.



spoken many things to the bishop in the interest of peace. The bishop had replied that they would have to get him in two and three places out of his before they could give the possession to infants, because, as he had already alleged, it was not given according to the laws of the realm.

The two groups now rode in for some distance together. As they were going along, the Spaniards told infants that besides a certain number on the road about 6,000 Indians were waiting and that they were going to kill him alone. The receptor wrote in his report that already before they left the city he had been told that if infants dared to take possession of the people there was a large number of armed Spaniards and Chichimecs waiting besides a cross outside the city in order to kill him. According to his information the bishop was to embrace the receptor during the attack because he did not want anyone but infants to be killed. The receptor observed that, before they left the city and after they met along the road, the bishop was very fearful and disturbed, telling him that he (the receptor) knew the terms of the law and the case as well as the contradictions and dangers that were expected, and that he should not give cause for the natives to commit crimes which might result in death, because the possession was already taken. The receptor warned the bishop to give careful consideration to what he was commanded to do by His Majesty and the audience in accordance with their commission, which he would carry out even in the face of greater peril. If anything happened it would be the responsibility of the bishop and his companions.



Before they reached the place where the Indian warriors were said to be waiting, Infante stopped in the road and presented a written statement, indicating that, because the bishop and company insisted on going with them and the tumult was increasing, he wished to turn back and would return to Mexico to report the whole matter to viceroy and audiencia. The executor, he said, could not do any more because the bishop had the whole province at his command. The executor responded that he was willing to proceed with the possession and that if they turned back it would be Infante's responsibility. Infante then stated that he knew for certain that the bishop had placed many warriors a little further ahead and that by the command of the bishop they were to kill him. Because of this he thought God and King would be better served if they turned back.

The bishop, executor, and Infante turned back, but the receptor went ahead in order to see what was there. The clerics and some of the servants of the bishop would not leave him. Before they reached the place, one of the servants of the bishop spurred his horse ahead and was lost to sight. After a long stretch of road the receptor again met the servant. The receptor believed that the servant had ridden ahead to tell the warriors to leave because, when he reached the cross, he found no warriors but only many Indians among the cornfields and rocks on both sides of the road. Then he returned to the city.

Later when Infante was trying to prove that Quiroga had planned to have the Indians kill him, he called five Indian witnesses. Their testimony is suspect because they all came from towns which Infante







controlled. They all told of having passed along the road to Santa Fe on the morning when Infante was to start his acts of possession. They claimed to have seen a large gathering of Tarascan and Chichimec warriors by a cross in the road, who said they were waiting to kill Infante if he proceeded in his determination to take their pueblos and lands from them. Only one witness said that Quiroga had commanded this; the other four laid the responsibility on Don Pedro, the Tarascan governor.

On October 2 Quiroga presented a written statement regarding his part in the affair of the previous day. He said his intention, as was clear to Infante, was that there should not be disturbances, riots, and killings, such as would have occurred for several reasons. The Indians were much disturbed because of the injustice and molestation which was being done to them in forcefully despoiling them of what they had held peacefully and needed in order to live. The executor would have exceeded his commission in granting the possession to Infante since it was not undisputed and vacant but taken by the Indians and Church of Michoacán. On the night before his attempted acts of possession Infante had gone to where the Indians were and had maltreated, injured, and threatened them so much in speech that there was reason to fear that, if the bishop had left his side, they would have killed him. Therefore, it was only right that he should have gone with Infante and the officials for the protection of his own rights and that he should have been accompanied by some servants to resist the Indians lest perhaps they should kill Infante. Infante again contended that the bishop did not intend







to sow peace but discord and that he had given the Indians to understand that if they killed him it would not bring harm on them because it would be the work of a community. He proposed to prove his accusations in good time.

Infante returned to the audiencia breathing fire because of his rebuff. He presented a criminal accusation against Quiroga on October 15, 1539. He accused the bishop of being the principal cause of the trouble and of having assembled a force of 10,000 or 12,000 Indians to kill him and his companions. He asserted that Quiroga and those who assisted him were guilty of the crime of treason for resisting a royal decree and were deserving of grave physical punishments and death. He asked that these penalties be executed on their persons and goods. Although the audiencia allowed Infante to take testimony to support his accusations, there is no evidence that any action was ever taken against Quiroga or the Indians.

Infante also asked that one of the oidores be sent to execute his letter and to do justice to the guilty. On October 23, 1539, the audiencia informed Infante that the viceroy himself was preparing to leave for Michoacán and that he would appoint someone who would execute the letter in spite of all appeals, supplications, protestations, requerimientos, and contradictions.

Viceroy Mendoza arrived in Michoacán sometime toward the end of 1539.<sup>25</sup> On December 31, 1539, he spoke to the principales of the

---

<sup>25</sup>Quiroga vs. Infante, 1540. The next several pages depend entirely on this source. The acts of possession made by Mendoza's authority are found in both the 1539 and the 1540 documents.







barrios de la laguna who had been summoned to Pátzcuaro. He told them of the decree of His Majesty and commanded them that from that day forward they should give their tributes to Juan Infante. The principales answered that they belonged to His Majesty and were his vassals. They had never served nor given tribute to Juan Infante but had always been subject to the City of Michoacán and since the coming of the Spaniards they had given tribute only to His Majesty. They would rather die and leave their homes and lands than serve and give tribute to Infante.

Mendoza then told them that they and all the natives of New Spain were vassals of His Majesty and that now His Majesty was commanding them to give their tributes to Infante. They would still remain vassals of His Majesty. The principales replied that, since they were free vassals of His Majesty, they and the other natives of their pueblos would come to live in Pátzcuaro and in other towns of the province. They would leave their lands, and those who would plant them could pay the tribute, because they wished to serve His Majesty and not Juan Infante. Mendoza assured them that the vassals of His Majesty had that liberty and that no force could be put on them in regard to it. Don Pedro now took the floor to complain that an injustice was being done to him and the City of Michoacán in taking away their subject pueblos without allowing them a hearing. Mendoza insisted that what His Majesty commanded must be fulfilled above all. If they had anything to say, they should say it, and he would give a complete report of it to the Emperor. His Majesty would command that they be heard and their justice upheld. The reply of the principales was that they reaffirmed what they had already said.



...the ...  
...of the ...  
...said they ...  
...measured ...  
...had never ...  
...subject to ...  
...they had ...  
...issue ...  
...Henderson ...  
...again ...  
...leading ...  
...vessels of ...  
...first ...  
...would ...  
...would ...  
...trouble, ...  
...Henderson ...  
...and that ...  
...took the ...  
...the City ...  
...ing them ...  
...must be ...  
...say it, ...  
...Henderson ...  
...regis of the ...  
...well,



Mendoza then appointed Velasco de Barrionuevo to go with Infante and give him possession of the pueblos in spite of all objections. The acts of possession began on Saturday, January 3, 1540, in the pueblo of Iramangaro and were completed on January 5. Infante and Barrionuevo were followed step by step by Pedro de Yepes and Antonio Castro, who, in the name of the Church, City, and natives of Michoacán, made formal objections to each act of possession and forced the executor to eject them physically from each pueblo, so that Infante could not claim to have received peaceful possession. On January 5, when they reached the vicinity of Santa Fe, Yepes presented the executor with the documents of sale, donation, and possession which had been made for Santa Fe and which were sanctioned by a royal cedula. Barrionuevo made no attempt to go against such clear evidence of prior possession. Perhaps some understanding had been reached with Mendoza in this regard.

When Infante sent the record of his acts of possession to the Council he sent along a petition.<sup>26</sup> Although undated, it appears to have been made out soon after the acts of possession. In it he complained that the cacique, principales, and natives of Guayameo had all gone to live in Santa Fe, which Quiroga had built within the bounds of Guayameo while Infante was denied the possession of it. He asked that if Santa Fe was within Guayameo it should be commanded to give tribute and service to him. He also petitioned that Quiroga be commanded to build his pueblo de Santa Fe somewhere else where it would not be prejudicial to him and his holdings.

---

<sup>26</sup>Quiroga vs. Infante, 1539.







In another paragraph, Infante complained that Quiroga held certain lands in Guayameo, Chopícuaro, and Cozaro which he had bought from Don Pedro. According to Infante, these lands did not belong to Don Pedro but to the pueblos within which they lay. He asked for a royal decree that, if the lands belonged to Don Pedro, the sale should be valid but, if they did not belong to the Indian governor, the Indians of Santa Fe should be ordered to leave them and the bishop should get his money back from Don Pedro. A note in the margin of this paragraph gives the answer of the Council: "To the viceroy: that he should look into it and do justice briefly."

The extent of Infante's ambition is seen in another paragraph of the petition, in which he asked to be made alcalde mayor of his pueblos. This would have made his pueblos a kind of state in themselves, subject wholly to Infante's authority as the official of civil justice of the first instance. The Council responded with a simple denial: "No hay lugar."

The struggle between Quiroga and Infante over the barrios de la laguna continued through many years and many legal twists and turns. On February 3, 1540, the audiencia opened the action on the appeal by issuing an official act commanding both sides to gather testimony. Since Infante was now in possession of the towns, every delay was an advantage to him. He used every means possible to slow the case down. He demanded two years' time to send a questionnaire to Spain to get testimony from such men as Nuño de Guzmán and Diego Delgadillo. On August 19, 1540, the audiencia granted him a year and a half from the time of the sailing



In another paragraph, Infante explained that through his sale of  
 land in Guaymas, Chihuahua, and Sonora which he had bought from  
 Don Pedro. According to Infante, these lands did not belong to Don  
 Pedro but to the people within which they lay. He asked for a royal  
 decree that, if the lands belonged to Don Pedro, the sale should be  
 valid but, if they did not belong to the Indian Governor, the Indians  
 of Santa Fe should be ordered to leave them and the bishop should get  
 his money back from Don Pedro. A note in the margin of this paragraph  
 gives the answer of the Council: "To the viceroys: that he should look  
 into it and do justice strictly."

The extent of Infante's ambition is seen in another paragraph  
 of the petition, in which he asked to be made alcade mayor of his  
 province. This would have made his province a kind of state in them-  
 selves, subject wholly to Infante's authority as the official of civil  
 justice of the first instance. The Council responded with a simple  
 denial: "No hay lugar."

The struggle between Gutierrez and Infante over the petition to  
 be judge continued through many years and many legal trials and turns.  
 On February 5, 1840, the audiencia opened the session on the appeal by  
 issuing an official not commanding both sides to get their testimony. Since  
 Infante was now in possession of the town, every delay was an advantage  
 to him. He used every means possible to slow the case down. He demanded  
 two years' time to send a questionnaire to Spain to get testimony from  
 such men as Juan de Guzman and Diego Velazquez. On August 19, 1840,  
 the audiencia granted him a year and a half from the time of the calling



of the first ship from the port. Infante never presented the testimony from Spain but he did hold up the suit in Mexico until his time had run out.

The positions of the two sides changed very little from those taken at the very outset of the dispute. Quiroga's party contended that Infante's claim was based on false documents, that Infante had never had prior possession of the pueblos, and that in giving the pueblos to Infante an injustice had been done to the Bishop, City, and Indians of Michoacán without their having been heard. Infante, on the other hand, attempted to prove that his documents were valid and that the barrios did not belong to the City of Michoacán.

The character of Infante's proof was shown up by the fact that three questions were struck from his interrogatory by orders of the audiencia. Moreover, two witnesses whose testimony was of key importance were later re-examined by command of the audiencia and they denied having given the testimony that had been presented under their names. One of them, Juan Pérez Calvillo, who, according to the first statement attributed to him, had seen Infante's original cedula of encomienda before its loss and knew its contents, later denied that he could either read or write. Another witness, the Comendador Juan Fernández Infante de Barrios, flatly refused to be re-examined regarding his relationship with Juan Infante, even though cited to do so twice by the audiencia, once in Mexico and once in Guadalajara.

The audiencia made no decision regarding this case, since it was an appeal of a decision of the Council of the Indies. On April 22, 1544,







the audiencia decreed that the case was ready to be sent to the Council.<sup>27</sup> There is no indication as to what action, if any, was taken on it in Spain.

While this suit was being carried on, Quiroga undertook to make the position of Santa Fe even more invulnerable. He informed the Council of the hospital and college he had founded in the city of Michoacán and asked the king to take the title of patron of the two institutions. A royal cedula was issued in Barcelona on May 1, 1543, granting the bishop's request.<sup>28</sup>

There seems to have been no further legal action in regard to the barrios de la laguna until Quiroga was in Spain between 1547 and 1554. Even then he does not appear to have attended to it until shortly before his return to Mexico. On the last page of the mammoth record of the suit between Quiroga and Infante there is a notation that the party of the bishop, governor, and principales of Michoacán had paid 9,000 maravedís for the review of the case in Madrid on July 29, 1552.<sup>29</sup>

Quiroga now took a new approach in his attempt to dislodge Infante. This encomendero had been mentioned among several others in a paragraph of the New Laws of 1542 as having an excessive number of Indians. The law had decreed that Indians should be taken from these persons in spite of any appeal.<sup>30</sup> Quiroga reminded the Council that

<sup>27</sup>Quiroga vs. Infante, 1540.

<sup>28</sup>León, Documentos, pp. 34-35.

<sup>29</sup>Quiroga vs. Infante, 1540, f. 2328v.

<sup>30</sup>Cf. DII, XVI, 389.







this law had never been carried out in regard to Infante. He asked that, because Infante held the barrios de la laguna, of which the City of Michoacán had been violently despoiled, they should be taken from him in fulfillment of the law and returned to the City of Michoacán. Two cédulas were issued in Madrid on March 3, 1553, commanding the law be executed against Infante in the way Quiroga had requested.<sup>31</sup>

Quiroga presented these cédulas before the audiencia in Mexico on July 30, 1554. The audiencia gave them formal obedience and on August 3 they put them into force. Infante appealed, but on September 27, 1554, the audiencia confirmed its previous decision. Infante now appealed directly to the crown and on August 3, 1555, was granted a second review of the case before the Council by the authority of the Princess of Portugal, governor of the kingdom. For many years no decision was forthcoming. In 1574, after both Quiroga and Juan Infante were dead, Infante's son and heir, Juan Infante Samaniego, brought the case once more to the attention of the Council. On April 26, 1575, the Council finally and definitively confirmed the sentence of the audiencia that the barrios de la laguna should remain subject to the City of Michoacán.

Having made our way through this long and laborious struggle of litigious giants, we will turn back once more to the year 1540 or

---

<sup>31</sup>These concluding judicial acts regarding the barrios de la laguna are found in: [El fiscal] con Juan Infante, vecino de México sobre los pueblos de la laguna de Michoacán que le estaban encomendados, 1554, AGI, Justicia, leg. 203, no. 2.







thereabouts for a rare insight into the inner workings of Santa Fe de la Laguna. Cristóbal Cabrera, who presented Quiroga as a model of missionary method, drew much of his material from the operation of this pueblo-hospital. We do not know exactly when he observed the things that he reported, but he must have done so before 1545, because in that year he went back to Spain, never to return to Mexico.<sup>32</sup> His name was among those of the official witnesses to the acts of sale and donation by Don Pedro to Santa Fe in 1538,<sup>33</sup> but he was not at all in evidence during the hassle between Quiroga and Infante in 1539. This, however, does not preclude the possibility of his having been in Michoacán after 1539.

The first Indians to come to Santa Fe were, of course, those who lived fairly close at hand. While there, they were instructed carefully in Christian doctrine and were given an example of Christian charity by the kind generosity with which they were received and given everything they needed free during the time they were being instructed.<sup>34</sup> The bishop tried to leave a lasting impression on these neophytes by the solemnity of the sacrament of baptism. Quiroga was very insistent that baptism of the Indians be carried out after the manner of the early Church, i.e., preceded by a catechumenate and administered only on the feasts of Christmas, Easter, and Pentecost, and with full solemnity

---

<sup>32</sup>Cabrera, p. 17.

<sup>33</sup>Quiroga vs. Infante, 1540, ff. 152v, 155.

<sup>34</sup>Cabrera, pp. 19-20.







except in cases of grave necessity.<sup>35</sup> Cabrera describes some of the pomp and splendor of the occasion. There was a great general procession with large numbers of candidates all clothed in white robes. Added to this was a large group of singers and musicians who rendered liturgical chants and the devout hymns which the bishop himself composed for them. The hymns were generally based on Scriptural metaphors. Those who approached the waters of baptism were compared to lambs of Christ cleansed in the Jordan, to deer panting after fountains of water, to a tree planted near running waters which brings forth fruit in good season, or to branches incorporated into the true vine which is Christ. To add to the solemnity of the occasion, a large number of the clergy and civil officials assisted at the ceremony. Baptism was received with such enthusiasm by the large crowds that the bishop could not restrain his tears.<sup>36</sup>

Before the neophytes returned home the bishop gave them images of the Saviour, His Blessed Mother, the angels, and the saints. These they displayed to the Indians through whose territory they passed. As they spread the word of Quiroga's extraordinary kindness, goodness, and graciousness, natives who had never been conquered (the Chichimecs) began to come of their own accord. Large numbers of them presented themselves before him, the men wearing nothing but their weapons, the women covering their nakedness only with a loincloth of animal skins. They approached the bishop with every sign of respect, kissed his hand,

---

<sup>35</sup>Ioazbalceta, Zumárraga, I, 138-139; III, 110-111.

<sup>36</sup>Cabrera, p. 20.



amongst the crowd of people who were gathered  
going and coming of the festival. There was a great  
aston with large numbers of people who were in the  
to this was a large crowd of people who were in the  
all hearts and the crowd from which the festival  
them. The hymns were generally based on spiritual subjects.  
the expression the system of which was a great deal of  
observed in the Jordan, to have similar ideas. It was  
a tree planted near the river, which was a great deal of  
season, or to purchase the same. The tree was in the  
To add to the solemnity of the occasion, a large number of  
and civil officials visited in the morning. The festival was  
with much enthusiasm by the people. The festival was  
restored his term.

Before the festival, the people were in the  
of the festival, the festival was in the morning. The  
they displayed to the festival, the festival was in the  
they spread the word of festival, the festival was in the  
festival, the festival was in the morning. The festival was  
begin to come of their festival, the festival was in the  
festival before him, the festival was in the morning. The  
women covering their heads, the festival was in the morning.  
They approached the festival, the festival was in the morning.

---

<sup>3</sup> Josephson, *Journal*, p. 100-101, 1-11.  
<sup>30</sup> *Journal*, p. 101.



and asked his blessing. The leaders spoke before him with such eloquence that he remarked, "Did you ever see among unlettered people such eloquent orators?" He was unembarrassed that they approached him in their nakedness and savagery, because he realized that no one had come to teach them anything better. They requested Quiroga that, as he had shown such kindness to numberless other Indians, he should act in the same way toward them. They assured him that they were ready to believe and practice the faith and the way of life that he taught. The bishop encouraged them in their faith and trust in the Triune God and told them he would gladly provide them with everything they needed to perfect their knowledge and practice of the faith and the Christian way of life.<sup>37</sup>

In providing hospitality for the Indians, Bishop Quiroga did not neglect their entertainment. The boys would compete at shooting arrows at a distant target. For prizes they were given live rams and pigs. The bishop used these contests, which aroused the keenest competition and interest, to teach them moral lessons--that their deeds should converge on Christ the Saviour as their one target; that, as they had mastered the art of shooting, they must also attain the goal of heaven by the mastery of even mightier weapons, the knowledge of their faith. A deer would be released and there would be a contest to catch it. When the games were finished, the bishop would have clothing distributed among the Indians--cotton trousers and other articles of apparel that would excite the envy and shame of other naked Indians. He told them

---

<sup>37</sup>Ibid., pp. 20,22-23.



and asked his blessing. The Indians were down with their bows  
 drawn that he was dead. "Did you ever see anyone like that?" people asked  
 eloquent answers. "He was undoubtedly that they approached him in  
 their kindness and respect, because he realized that no one had come  
 to teach them anything better. They requested things that, as he had  
 shown such kindness to hundreds of other Indians, he should act in the  
 same way toward them. They assured him that they were ready to believe  
 and practice the faith and the way of life that he taught. The bishop  
 encouraged them in their faith and trust in the Father God and told  
 them he would gladly provide them with everything they needed to perfect  
 their knowledge and practice of the faith and the Christian way of  
 life.<sup>27</sup>

In providing hospitality for the Indians, Bishop Romero did not  
 neglect their entertainment. The boys would compete at shooting arrows  
 at a distant target. For prizes they were given five cents and pigs.  
 The bishop used these contests, which aroused the Indian competition  
 and interest, to teach them some lessons--that their jobs should con-  
 verge on Christ the Savior as their one target; that, as they had  
 mastered the art of shooting, they must also attain the goal of heaven  
 by the mastery of even mightier weapons, the knowledge of their faith.  
 A deer would be released and there would be a contest to catch it.  
 When the games were finished, the bishop would have closing distributed  
 among the Indians--cotton trousers and other articles of apparel that  
 would excite the envy and shame of other native Indians. He told them



that the clothing was a symbol of their having been cleansed in baptism and clothed in Christ Jesus. When they left Santa Fe, Quiroga appointed capable catechists among them to instruct them more profoundly in the faith.<sup>38</sup>

It was partly the fear of these Chichimecs with their incredibly accurate arrows that caused Infante to withdraw from his first attempt to take possession of his pueblos.<sup>39</sup> Later he accused Quiroga of taking the lands of Guayameo, Cozaro, and Chopícuaro and giving them to these wandering Chichimecs.<sup>40</sup> Quiroga's reply was that this was far better than making the lands into a pig farm as Infante had sworn and threatened to do.<sup>41</sup>

---

<sup>38</sup>Ibid., pp. 23-24.

<sup>39</sup>Quiroga vs. Infante, 1539.

<sup>40</sup>Quiroga vs. Infante, 1540, ff. 717v-718.

<sup>41</sup>Ibid., f. 986.







## CHAPTER VIII

### QUIROGA'S TESTAMENT AND ITS AFTEREFFECTS

According to Moreno, Bishop Quiroga died on Wednesday, March 14, 1565, in the town of Uruapan while he was making a visitation of his diocese.<sup>1</sup> That he died about the middle of March 1565 is supported by contemporary documentation; that he died in Uruapan is not. On April 24, 1565, Licenciado Valderrama, visitador of the audiencia of Mexico, reported to the crown that on the 24th of the previous month (March) news of the death of the bishop of Michoacán had reached the City of Mexico.<sup>2</sup> Since the time required for messages to pass between Michoacán and Mexico City was about a week, the bishop's death must have occurred at least as early as March 17 or 18. Thus there is little reason to disagree with Moreno's date of March 14, 1565, which he derived from the inscription on a painting of Quiroga which at one time hung in the cathedral of Michoacán.<sup>3</sup>

But as to his having died in Uruapan, in spite of the long-standing tradition in support of it, there are weighty considerations to the contrary. In 1573 the parish priests of the cathedral church in Pátzouaro conducted a suit against the Franciscans of that city to

---

<sup>1</sup>Moreno, p. 132.

<sup>2</sup>El Licenciado Valderrama a Su Majestad, México, 24 de abril, 1565, AGI, México, leg. 68, ramo 2.

<sup>3</sup>Moreno, p. 133.







deprive them of the right to have a baptismal font in their church. Among the questions of their interrogatory was one which read: "Further, if they know that the aforementioned Most Reverend Don Vasco de Quiroga, who was first bishop of this diocese, passed from this present life in this said city toward the beginning of the year 1565, let them tell what they know." "This said city" can refer only to Pátzcuaro where the probanza was being made and which was the only place in Michoacán at that time which had the right to call itself a city. Four of the witnesses, Juan de Benavides, Pedro de Castro, Canon Juan de Velasco, and Canon Garcé Rodríguez Pardo, stated that they were present at Quiroga's death and that it occurred as was stated in the question.<sup>4</sup> Canon Velasco's statement carries special weight since, as he remarked, he was one of the executors of Quiroga's will.<sup>5</sup>

The bishop's will was dated in the City of Michoacán (Pátzcuaro) on January 24, 1565. Just as the hospitals of Santa Fe had always been among his first loves during his life, so also at his death did he give them the greatest part of his attention.<sup>6</sup> He reconfirmed many of the

<sup>4</sup>El convento de los religiosos de San Francisco de la Provincia de Michoacán con la iglesia catedral de la misma provincia sobre la administración de la pila de bautismo, 1573, AGI, Justicia, leg. 178, no. 1, ramo 2.

<sup>5</sup>Quiroga, "Testamento," p. 286.

<sup>6</sup>Pages 276-284 of the printed edition of Quiroga's testament in Aguayo Spencer are concerned almost entirely with the hospitals of Santa Fe. This is nine pages out of a total text of seventeen pages. The text followed here will be that of the printed edition as emended by comparison with the manuscript copy in AGI, Justicia, leg. 208, no. 4. This copy was made by Alonso de Cáceres, the notary public apostolic who wrote out the original will for Quiroga.







arrangements he had made during his life and set up certain norms to be followed regarding the hospitals after his death.

He set up a complicated and somewhat confusing system of patrons for the hospitals. The one whom we may call the ordinary and proximate patron was the rector-lector of the college of San Nicolás, another of the bishop's prize projects, which he had founded in Pátzcuaro. In Quiroga's mind the college and hospitals were intimately connected and he prescribed that they were to help one another, "bearing one another's burdens" (Galatians 6:2). The hospitals were to give financial support to the rector of the college, and the college was to supply well-trained priests, capable in native languages, to take care of the hospitals. Above the rector in the hierarchy of patrons were the dean and college of canons of the cathedral of Michoacán, whose opinion was to be asked by the rector of San Nicolás before making appointments in Santa Fe.

As principal patron, protector and defender of the hospitals Quiroga designated Philip II, King of Spain, and his successors and in his name the president and oidores of the audiencia of Mexico and their successors, and he asked them to accept the patronage. In defect of the rector of San Nicolás, or in case a suitable and able person could not be found, or in his absence, the acuerdo of the president and oidores of the audiencia were to supply, decree, and see to the fulfillment of what Quiroga had commanded. If the King and audiencia were unwilling to accept the patronage of the hospitals, the bishop laid the obligation on the deans and cathedral chapters of the cathedrals of Mexico and Michoacán for that institution which fell within their respective



arrangement for a small group of his friends to be  
followed regarding the hospital after his death.

He had no complicated or serious illness even at the  
for the hospital. The case was not only the primary and  
pattern was the vector-factor of the failure of the hospital, another of  
the hospital's prime projects, which he had learned in his youth. In  
his mind the college and hospital were inseparably connected and  
he presented that they were to help one another. "During one night"  
"business" (Belmont 6:2). The hospital's goal is to provide financial support  
to the center of the college, and the college was to help self-education  
patients, namely in active programs, to take care of the hospital.

Above the vector in the hierarchy of patients are the dean and college  
of course of the hospital of Belmont, which is the center of the hospital  
by the vector of the hospital before making a commitment to the hospital.

An original pattern, professor and director of the hospital

George designated Philip II, King of Spain, and his successors and in  
his name the president and director of the hospital of Belmont and their

successors, and he asked them to accept the hospital. In effect of

the vector of the hospital, or in case a conflict and any person could

not be found, or in his absence, the hospital of the president and his

of the hospital were to supply. However, we see in the fulfillment of

what Belmont had intended. In the King and hospital were involved

to accept the patronage of the hospital, the hospital had the obligation

on the dean and central aspects of the hospital of Belmont and

Belmont for the hospital which will allow them to provide



jurisdictions. He entreated the archbishop of Mexico and commanded his successors in Michoacán that they enforce what he had ordained and that no new innovation be made nor any commutation to any other pious work at any time. In his mind it would be difficult to find a more pious or better work or one better suited to the needs of the natives.

The principal duty of the rector of San Nicolás relative to the hospitals would be the selection and appointment of capable priests as rectors of the hospitals. They were to be virtuous and able, with a sufficient knowledge of Indian languages, prudent, and devoted to the hospitality of the pueblos and to the way in which it was to be carried out. The rector of San Nicolás was to appoint them for three years at a time, with the knowledge and approval of the patrons and defenders of the hospitals. Their appointments were not to last longer than three years nor were they to have the force of a benefice, but the hospitals were committed to their care only as minors are committed to their tutors and guardians. Their appointments might be renewed after three years, but only if the qualities of the man warranted it and if it would be good for the hospital to leave him there and harmful to remove him. Even then the renewal of his appointment would have to be made expressly in writing. In no other way than by this triennial appointment could anyone gain the right to the office of rector. The rector of San Nicolás was to keep a book in which the triennial appointments and re-appointments of the rectors of the hospitals were to be recorded. Besides the rector a chaplain or chaplains might be appointed annually for the hospitals to assist the rectors. Both the rectors and chaplains







were to be chosen preferably from among the priests who had been educated in the college of San Nicolás. It was to be presumed that they would be more devoted to the ends and purposes of the hospitals and more grateful for their benefits.

The rectors of the hospitals and the chaplain to whom it might be committed were obliged to teach the Indians of Santa Fe and other Indians who wished to come the Doctrina Cristiana which Quiroga had paid to have printed while he was in Sevilla in 1553. This book had been composed originally by Gutierre González, a protonotary and comensal of the pope, to be taught in a chapel in Jaén by a fourth chaplain appointed for this purpose. It was divided into two parts. The first part treated of the virtues and good social behavior for young people; the second part applied the teachings to particular states of life--children, clergy, theologians, jurists, doctors, noblemen, peasants, merchants, and artisans.<sup>7</sup> Bishop Quiroga considered this book of Christian Doctrine to be particularly valuable for the Indians, because it gave them principles not only for spiritual life but also for correct moral and social behavior. He commanded that it be kept and guarded, with the admonitions contained in it, as though he himself had written them, as indeed he had made them his own by choosing and approving them. It was to be taught to all, both children and adults, because all had need of it. To the children it was to be taught every day of the year

---

<sup>7</sup>This work, which was long considered entirely lost, was found by G. R. G. Conway and a description of it was printed by Nicolás León, El Libro de Doctrina Christiana (México, 1928). But it seems now to have disappeared from view once more.







when there was an opportunity; to the adults on festive days so as not to interfere with their work. They were to repeat the doctrina so that they could give a good answer when questioned. The doctrina could be of value also to the Indians of the surrounding area who might wish to come there to be instructed and later could teach their relatives and neighbors in their villages, which was one of the principal causes which moved him to establish his hospitals. If at any time it would be possible to have a fourth chaplain in the hospitals, his principal duty would be the teaching of the Christian Doctrine, as in the chapel in Jaén. When there were only two chaplains besides the rector, it would be well if one of them would occupy himself primarily in this instruction.

The rector was also commanded in charity to preach the Holy Gospel to the Indians of the hospital in their own language on Sundays and principal feasts, and at least on those same days he was to have a High Mass. Special solemnity was to be given to the feasts of the Assumption of the Blessed Virgin (August 15), the Holy Saviour (November 9), the Exaltation of the Cross (September 14), St. Michael the Archangel (September 29), and St. Nicolas (December 6). Certain other obligations were laid on the rector and chaplains, if there were any such, to offer Masses and prayers for the patrons, founder, and benefactors of the hospitals, and also for Quiroga's departed parents and others whom he wished to remember.

Concerning the workings of the hospitals themselves, Quiroga asked that the rules and ordinances that he had written for them be



when there was an expert witness, it was not a matter of  
to interfere with their work. They were not to be  
they could give a good answer to the question. In fact, they  
of value also to the institution. The fact was that they  
to come there to be instructed. They were not to be  
and wherever in the world they were, they were to be  
which moved and to be instructed. They were not to be  
be possible to have a good answer to the question. In fact, they  
they would be the best of the institution. They were not to be  
in fact, when there was an expert witness, it was not a matter of  
would be well if one of them could answer the question. In fact, they  
instruction.  
The reason was also a matter of instruction. They were not to be  
hospital to the institution. The fact was that they were not to be  
and wherever in the world they were, they were to be  
High Mass. Special ceremony was to be given to the institution of the  
Assumption of the Blessed Virgin Mary. The fact was that they were not to be  
(November 9), the institution of the Blessed Virgin Mary. The fact was that they were not to be  
the Archangel (September 29), the institution of the Blessed Virgin Mary. The fact was that they were not to be  
other obligations were to be given to the institution of the Blessed Virgin Mary. The fact was that they were not to be  
any such, to offer Masses and to be instructed. They were not to be  
benefactors of the institution. The fact was that they were not to be  
and others who were not to be instructed. They were not to be  
Concerning the work of the institution of the Blessed Virgin Mary. The fact was that they were not to be  
asked that the work of the institution of the Blessed Virgin Mary. The fact was that they were not to be



kept and enforced and that they should not be exceeded in anything. The dean and college of canons were to see that the ordinances were enforced. The number of residents in each of the hospitals should be kept at the highest level that each could conveniently support. When there were openings, other Indians were to be placed there by the rector and regidores of the hospitals after consultation with one another. Since the regidores were to be Indians of the pueblo, they would know best who were the most needy. The bishop reconfirmed everything that he had given, bought, or obtained from His Majesty for the pueblo. Santa Fe de la Laguna was assured the right to use a mill, fulling-mill, and pasturage for livestock in the valley of Guaniqueo. These had been granted to Quiroga for the support of his college and hospital in Michoacán by a royal cedula of July 31, 1545, and the grant was reconfirmed by another royal cedula of November 3, 1550.<sup>8</sup>

The bishop's will also laid certain financial obligations on the hospitals. Every year each of the hospitals was to take 150 ducados or its equivalent to the College of San Nicolás for the rector of the college. The rectors of the hospitals were each to be paid annually 150 gold pesos de minas or its equivalent and their food in moderation. If there were chaplains, their salary was to be 100 gold pesos de minas annually or its equivalent and their food with the rector. The hospitals were also commanded to give 50 ducados a year for special Mass intentions; 25 ducados of this amount were to be sent to the Church of San Nicolás in Madrigal, Spain, for Masses and prayers for the souls of

---

<sup>8</sup>Puga, II, 93-95.







the bishop's parents and to assure the proper care of their tomb. The other 25 ducados were to go to the dean and college of canons of the cathedral of Michoacán for Masses and prayers for Quiroga himself and for the benefactors of the cathedral, college, and hospitals. The obligations toward the college of San Nicolás and for the Masses were to be binding when the hospitals could conveniently fulfill them, concerning which a charge was laid on the consciences of the rectors of the hospitals and those who were obliged to attend to it.

Santa Fe de la Laguna was given the further obligation of helping the Hospital de Nuestra Señora de la Asunción y Santa Marta which Quiroga had established in Pátzcuaro near the cathedral. To it the hospital of Santa Fe was to give annually three blankets for the beds of the poor. This obligation was to last for as long as the looms on which the blankets were made in Santa Fe should last.

The pueblos of Santa Fe were not without their share of lawsuits even after their founder's death. The first of them arose directly from Quiroga's will and its provisions regarding the patronage of the pueblos.<sup>9</sup> On September 10, 1565, Don Pedro de Yepes presented a petition before the audiencia. Yepes, whom we met previously as Quiroga's lay attorney in the struggle with Juan Infante, had by this time become a canon and treasurer of the Cathedral of Michoacán. His petition was

---

<sup>9</sup>[El fiscal] con el dean y cabildo de Michoacán sobre el patronato de los dos hospitales de Santa Fe y Colegio de San Nicolás. 1566, AGI, Justicia, leg. 208, no. 4.







that the section of Quiroga's will be carried out in which he named the rector of San Nicolás and the cathedral chapter of Michoacán as patrons of the hospitals of Santa Fe and the Royal Audiencia of Mexico as its defender and protector. He presented a copy of Quiroga's will to show the nature of the patronage. The audiencia asked to see the cedula by which His Majesty had accepted the patronage of the college and hospitals. When Canon Yepes later presented the cedula, issued in Barcelona on May 1, 1543, he noted that it pertained only to San Nicolás and Santa Fe de Michoacán and he requested the royal patronage for them only. He said that Bishop Quiroga's intention was that the rector of San Nicolás with the college of canons should be the ordinary and inferior patron of the hospital, and that His Majesty should be the superior patron and supreme defender.

On December 4, 1565, the audiencia gave a decree in the case by which it declared the rector of San Nicolás and the cathedral chapter of Michoacán to be patrons and administrators of the College of San Nicolás and the hospitals of Santa Fe. In case they did not make use of this administration as the bishop had obliged them by his will, the audiencia would provide what was best. At this juncture the fiscal of the audiencia entered the case, asserting that Quiroga had given the patronage to the crown during his life and could not take it back by his last will. Yepes countered that there was no incompatibility between the inferior patronage of his party and the principal patronage of His Majesty. On December 19 the audiencia confirmed its decree of December 4. The fiscal, however, appealed the case to the Council of







the Indies and, in spite of the formal protest of the other side, the audiencia granted the appeal in a decree of January 16, 1566. But in the same decree they commanded that a carta ejecutoria be given to the rector of San Nicolás and the cathedral chapter, provided they gave bond in case they should lose the suit in Spain. A copy of the suit was to be kept in Mexico and the original sent to Spain. The case was received in Madrid on November 9, 1566, but there is no indication that it was ever pursued further.

On February 5, 1566, the carta ejecutoria was issued by the audiencia to the patrons of the college and hospitals.<sup>10</sup> Don Pedro de Yepes was given possession of Santa Fe de México in the name of its patrons on April 25, 1566, by authority of Cristóbal de Cubillas, deputy of the alguacil mayor de corte, and in the presence of the scribe Sebastián Vázquez. Included in the acts of possession were the hospital, church, sacristy and all contained in them, the inn near the hospital, the lands of the pueblo, a mill with two stones for grinding flour, and a fulling-mill with two wheels and two sets of pestles. On April 26 Jerónimo de Medina, substituting for Yepes, took possession of the island of Tultepec with its church of St. Paul near the pueblos of Capulhuac and Ocoyoacac.

---

<sup>10</sup>The introductory section of this decree is printed in León, Documentos, pp. 33-34. The complete document together with the acts of possession of Santa Fe de México is found in: Ciudad de México con el dean y cabildo de la Iglesia de Michoacán sobre que se incorpore y anexe el hospital que fundó D. Vasco de Quiroga, obispo de la dicha iglesia, a él de los indios de la mencionada Ciudad de México, 1572, AGI, Justicia, leg. 171, no. 2. Two other copies are found in: El obispo de Michoacán a Su Majestad, 8 de abril, 1661, AGI, México, leg. 374. All of them incorporate copies of Quiroga's will which derive from that contained in AGI, Justicia, leg. 208, no. 4.







After Bishop Quiroga's death the pueblo of Santa Fe de la Laguna appears to have had a rather peaceful history, so that we find little more than an occasional reference to it in the letters of the bishops of Michoacán. But Santa Fe de México, lying outside the province and diocese of Michoacán but subject to the ecclesiastical authorities of that diocese, continued to be a center of disputes.

In 1572 the City of Mexico once more attempted to gain control of the hospital which lay on its outskirts.<sup>11</sup> On October 13, 1572, Jerónimo López, procurador mayor of the city, petitioned the audiencia that he be allowed to take testimony to show that the will of the founder of Santa Fe de México was not being carried out, because very few Indians went to the hospital to be cured. In the royal hospital for the Indians in Mexico City, on the other hand, there were many sick Indians and the hospital was poor. According to López and the City of Mexico, the will of the founder of Santa Fe de México would be fulfilled much better if Santa Fe with its considerable incomes were annexed to the royal hospital. There is ample reason to doubt that Bishop Quiroga would have considered this a fulfillment of his wishes, since in his testament he had been very firm in stating that the work of Santa Fe was not to be commuted to any other pious work. The petition and questionnaire presented by the city made it appear that Quiroga's prime purpose in founding Santa Fe was the care of the sick. But we have seen that this was not true.

---

<sup>11</sup>El consejo, justicia y regimiento de la Ciudad de México con el dean y cabildo de la Iglesia de Michoacán, 1572, AGI, Justicia, leg. 171, no. 2.



After Bishop Lamy's death the people of Santa Fe had no  
opportunity to have had a further general meeting, so that we find little  
more than an occasional reference to it in the history of the diocese  
of New Mexico. But Santa Fe de Nuevo Mexico, being outside the province and  
diocese of New Mexico, was subject to the ecclesiastical jurisdiction of  
that diocese, continued to be a center of interest.

In 1872 the City of Mexico once more attempted to gain control  
of the hospital which lay on its territory. It was October 15, 1872,  
Jeronimo Lopez, procurator mayor of the city, petitioned the audiencia  
that he be allowed to take testimony to show that the will of the founder  
of Santa Fe de Nuevo Mexico was not being carried out, because very few Indians  
went to the hospital to be cured. At the same time he asked for the Indians  
in Mexico City, on the other hand, there were many sick Indians and the  
hospital was going. According to Lopez and the City of Mexico, the will  
of the founder of Santa Fe de Nuevo Mexico would be fulfilled much better if  
Santa Fe with its considerable income were annexed to the hospital.  
Lopez there he could reason to show that his city would have  
considered this a fulfillment of his wishes, since in his statement he  
had been very firm in stating that the work of Santa Fe was not to be  
committed to any other place worth. The petition and accompanying pro-  
posed by the city made it appear that Lopez's purpose in  
founding Santa Fe was the cure of the sick. But we have seen that this  
was not true.

---

11. En comas, Justicia y regularidad de la Ciudad de Mexico en  
el tema y edificio de la Iglesia de Mexico, 1772, 1773, 1774, 1775, 1776, 1777, 1778, 1779, 1780, 1781, 1782, 1783, 1784, 1785, 1786, 1787, 1788, 1789, 1790, 1791, 1792, 1793, 1794, 1795, 1796, 1797, 1798, 1799, 1800, 1801, 1802, 1803, 1804, 1805, 1806, 1807, 1808, 1809, 1810, 1811, 1812, 1813, 1814, 1815, 1816, 1817, 1818, 1819, 1820, 1821, 1822, 1823, 1824, 1825, 1826, 1827, 1828, 1829, 1830, 1831, 1832, 1833, 1834, 1835, 1836, 1837, 1838, 1839, 1840, 1841, 1842, 1843, 1844, 1845, 1846, 1847, 1848, 1849, 1850, 1851, 1852, 1853, 1854, 1855, 1856, 1857, 1858, 1859, 1860, 1861, 1862, 1863, 1864, 1865, 1866, 1867, 1868, 1869, 1870, 1871, 1872, 1873, 1874, 1875, 1876, 1877, 1878, 1879, 1880, 1881, 1882, 1883, 1884, 1885, 1886, 1887, 1888, 1889, 1890, 1891, 1892, 1893, 1894, 1895, 1896, 1897, 1898, 1899, 1900, 1901, 1902, 1903, 1904, 1905, 1906, 1907, 1908, 1909, 1910, 1911, 1912, 1913, 1914, 1915, 1916, 1917, 1918, 1919, 1920, 1921, 1922, 1923, 1924, 1925, 1926, 1927, 1928, 1929, 1930, 1931, 1932, 1933, 1934, 1935, 1936, 1937, 1938, 1939, 1940, 1941, 1942, 1943, 1944, 1945, 1946, 1947, 1948, 1949, 1950, 1951, 1952, 1953, 1954, 1955, 1956, 1957, 1958, 1959, 1960, 1961, 1962, 1963, 1964, 1965, 1966, 1967, 1968, 1969, 1970, 1971, 1972, 1973, 1974, 1975, 1976, 1977, 1978, 1979, 1980, 1981, 1982, 1983, 1984, 1985, 1986, 1987, 1988, 1989, 1990, 1991, 1992, 1993, 1994, 1995, 1996, 1997, 1998, 1999, 2000, 2001, 2002, 2003, 2004, 2005, 2006, 2007, 2008, 2009, 2010, 2011, 2012, 2013, 2014, 2015, 2016, 2017, 2018, 2019, 2020, 2021, 2022, 2023, 2024, 2025, 2026, 2027, 2028, 2029, 2030, 2031, 2032, 2033, 2034, 2035, 2036, 2037, 2038, 2039, 2040, 2041, 2042, 2043, 2044, 2045, 2046, 2047, 2048, 2049, 2050, 2051, 2052, 2053, 2054, 2055, 2056, 2057, 2058, 2059, 2060, 2061, 2062, 2063, 2064, 2065, 2066, 2067, 2068, 2069, 2070, 2071, 2072, 2073, 2074, 2075, 2076, 2077, 2078, 2079, 2080, 2081, 2082, 2083, 2084, 2085, 2086, 2087, 2088, 2089, 2090, 2091, 2092, 2093, 2094, 2095, 2096, 2097, 2098, 2099, 2100, 2101, 2102, 2103, 2104, 2105, 2106, 2107, 2108, 2109, 2110, 2111, 2112, 2113, 2114, 2115, 2116, 2117, 2118, 2119, 2120, 2121, 2122, 2123, 2124, 2125, 2126, 2127, 2128, 2129, 2130, 2131, 2132, 2133, 2134, 2135, 2136, 2137, 2138, 2139, 2140, 2141, 2142, 2143, 2144, 2145, 2146, 2147, 2148, 2149, 2150, 2151, 2152, 2153, 2154, 2155, 2156, 2157, 2158, 2159, 2160, 2161, 2162, 2163, 2164, 2165, 2166, 2167, 2168, 2169, 2170, 2171, 2172, 2173, 2174, 2175, 2176, 2177, 2178, 2179, 2180, 2181, 2182, 2183, 2184, 2185, 2186, 2187, 2188, 2189, 2190, 2191, 2192, 2193, 2194, 2195, 2196, 2197, 2198, 2199, 2200, 2201, 2202, 2203, 2204, 2205, 2206, 2207, 2208, 2209, 2210, 2211, 2212, 2213, 2214, 2215, 2216, 2217, 2218, 2219, 2220, 2221, 2222, 2223, 2224, 2225, 2226, 2227, 2228, 2229, 2230, 2231, 2232, 2233, 2234, 2235, 2236, 2237, 2238, 2239, 2240, 2241, 2242, 2243, 2244, 2245, 2246, 2247, 2248, 2249, 2250, 2251, 2252, 2253, 2254, 2255, 2256, 2257, 2258, 2259, 2260, 2261, 2262, 2263, 2264, 2265, 2266, 2267, 2268, 2269, 2270, 2271, 2272, 2273, 2274, 2275, 2276, 2277, 2278, 2279, 2280, 2281, 2282, 2283, 2284, 2285, 2286, 2287, 2288, 2289, 2290, 2291, 2292, 2293, 2294, 2295, 2296, 2297, 2298, 2299, 2300, 2301, 2302, 2303, 2304, 2305, 2306, 2307, 2308, 2309, 2310, 2311, 2312, 2313, 2314, 2315, 2316, 2317, 2318, 2319, 2320, 2321, 2322, 2323, 2324, 2325, 2326, 2327, 2328, 2329, 2330, 2331, 2332, 2333, 2334, 2335, 2336, 2337, 2338, 2339, 2340, 2341, 2342, 2343, 2344, 2345, 2346, 2347, 2348, 2349, 2350, 2351, 2352, 2353, 2354, 2355, 2356, 2357, 2358, 2359, 2360, 2361, 2362, 2363, 2364, 2365, 2366, 2367, 2368, 2369, 2370, 2371, 2372, 2373, 2374, 2375, 2376, 2377, 2378, 2379, 2380, 2381, 2382, 2383, 2384, 2385, 2386, 2387, 2388, 2389, 2390, 2391, 2392, 2393, 2394, 2395, 2396, 2397, 2398, 2399, 2400, 2401, 2402, 2403, 2404, 2405, 2406, 2407, 2408, 2409, 2410, 2411, 2412, 2413, 2414, 2415, 2416, 2417, 2418, 2419, 2420, 2421, 2422, 2423, 2424, 2425, 2426, 2427, 2428, 2429, 2430, 2431, 2432, 2433, 2434, 2435, 2436, 2437, 2438, 2439, 2440, 2441, 2442, 2443, 2444, 2445, 2446, 2447, 2448, 2449, 2450, 2451, 2452, 2453, 2454, 2455, 2456, 2457, 2458, 2459, 2460, 2461, 2462, 2463, 2464, 2465, 2466, 2467, 2468, 2469, 2470, 2471, 2472, 2473, 2474, 2475, 2476, 2477, 2478, 2479, 2480, 2481, 2482, 2483, 2484, 2485, 2486, 2487, 2488, 2489, 2490, 2491, 2492, 2493, 2494, 2495, 2496, 2497, 2498, 2499, 2500, 2501, 2502, 2503, 2504, 2505, 2506, 2507, 2508, 2509, 2510, 2511, 2512, 2513, 2514, 2515, 2516, 2517, 2518, 2519, 2520, 2521, 2522, 2523, 2524, 2525, 2526, 2527, 2528, 2529, 2530, 2531, 2532, 2533, 2534, 2535, 2536, 2537, 2538, 2539, 2540, 2541, 2542, 2543, 2544, 2545, 2546, 2547, 2548, 2549, 2550, 2551, 2552, 2553, 2554, 2555, 2556, 2557, 2558, 2559, 2560, 2561, 2562, 2563, 2564, 2565, 2566, 2567, 2568, 2569, 2570, 2571, 2572, 2573, 2574, 2575, 2576, 2577, 2578, 2579, 2580, 2581, 2582, 2583, 2584, 2585, 2586, 2587, 2588, 2589, 2590, 2591, 2592, 2593, 2594, 2595, 2596, 2597, 2598, 2599, 2600, 2601, 2602, 2603, 2604, 2605, 2606, 2607, 2608, 2609, 2610, 2611, 2612, 2613, 2614, 2615, 2616, 2617, 2618, 2619, 2620, 2621, 2622, 2623, 2624, 2625, 2626, 2627, 2628, 2629, 2630, 2631, 2632, 2633, 2634, 2635, 2636, 2637, 2638, 2639, 2640, 2641, 2642, 2643, 2644, 2645, 2646, 2647, 2648, 2649, 2650, 2651, 2652, 2653, 2654, 2655, 2656, 2657, 2658, 2659, 2660, 2661, 2662, 2663, 2664, 2665, 2666, 2667, 2668, 2669, 2670, 2671, 2672, 2673, 2674, 2675, 2676, 2677, 2678, 2679, 2680, 2681, 2682, 2683, 2684, 2685, 2686, 2687, 2688, 2689, 2690, 2691, 2692, 2693, 2694, 2695, 2696, 2697, 2698, 2699, 2700, 2701, 2702, 2703, 2704, 2705, 2706, 2707, 2708, 2709, 2710, 2711, 2712, 2713, 2714, 2715, 2716, 2717, 2718, 2719, 2720, 2721, 2722, 2723, 2724, 2725, 2726, 2727, 2728, 2729, 2730, 2731, 2732, 2733, 2734, 2735, 2736, 2737, 2738, 2739, 2740, 2741, 2742, 2743, 2744, 2745, 2746, 2747, 2748, 2749, 2750, 2751, 2752, 2753, 2754, 2755, 2756, 2757, 2758, 2759, 2760, 2761, 2762, 2763, 2764, 2765, 2766, 2767, 2768, 2769, 2770, 2771, 2772, 2773, 2774, 2775, 2776, 2777, 2778, 2779, 2780, 2781, 2782, 2783, 2784, 2785, 2786, 2787, 2788, 2789, 2790, 2791, 2792, 2793, 2794, 2795, 2796, 2797, 2798, 2799, 2800, 2801, 2802, 2803, 2804, 2805, 2806, 2807, 2808, 2809, 2810, 2811, 2812, 2813, 2814, 2815, 2816, 2817, 2818, 2819, 2820, 2821, 2822, 2823, 2824, 2825, 2826, 2827, 2828, 2829, 2830, 2831, 2832, 2833, 2834, 2835, 2836, 2837, 2838, 2839, 2840, 2841, 2842, 2843, 2844, 2845, 2846, 2847, 2848, 2849, 2850, 2851, 2852, 2853, 2854, 2855, 2856, 2857, 2858, 2859, 2860, 2861, 2862, 2863, 2864, 2865, 2866, 2867, 2868, 2869, 2870, 2871, 2872, 2873, 2874, 2875, 2876, 2877, 2878, 2879, 2880, 2881, 2882, 2883, 2884, 2885, 2886, 2887, 2888, 2889, 2890, 2891, 2892, 2893, 2894, 2895, 2896, 2897, 2898, 2899, 2900, 2901, 2902, 2903, 2904, 2905, 2906, 2907, 2908, 2909, 2910, 2911, 2912, 2913, 2914, 2915, 2916, 2917, 2918, 2919, 2920, 2921, 2922, 2923, 2924, 2925, 2926, 2927, 2928, 2929, 2930, 2931, 2932, 2933, 2934, 2935, 2936, 2937, 2938, 2939, 2940, 2941, 2942, 2943, 2944, 2945, 2946, 2947, 2948, 2949, 2950, 2951, 2952, 2953, 2954, 2955, 2956, 2957, 2958, 2959, 2960, 2961, 2962, 2963, 2964, 2965, 2966, 2967, 2968, 2969, 2970, 2971, 2972, 2973, 2974, 2975, 2976, 2977, 2978, 2979, 2980, 2981, 2982, 2983, 2984, 2985, 2986, 2987, 2988, 2989, 2990, 2991, 2992, 2993, 2994, 2995, 2996, 2997, 2998, 2999, 3000, 3001, 3002, 3003, 3004, 3005, 3006, 3007, 3008, 3009, 3010, 3011, 3012, 3013, 3014, 3015, 3016, 3017, 3018, 3019, 3020, 3021, 3022, 3023, 3024, 3025, 3026, 3027, 3028, 3029, 3030, 3031, 3032, 3033, 3034, 3035, 3036, 3037, 3038, 3039, 3040, 3041, 3042, 3043, 3044, 3045, 3046, 3047, 3048, 3049, 3050, 3051, 3052, 3053, 3054, 3055, 3056, 3057, 3058, 3059, 3060, 3061, 3062, 3063, 3064, 3065, 3066, 3067, 3068, 3069, 3070, 3071, 3072, 3073, 3074, 3075, 3076, 3077, 3078, 3079, 3080, 3081, 3082, 3083, 3084, 3085, 3086, 3087, 3088, 3089, 3090, 3091, 3092, 3093, 3094, 3095, 3096, 3097, 3098, 3099, 3100, 3101, 3102, 3103, 3104, 3105, 3106, 3107, 3108, 3109, 3110, 3111, 3112, 3113, 3114, 3115, 3116, 3117, 3118, 3119, 3120, 3121, 3122, 3123, 3124, 3125, 3126, 3127, 3128, 3129, 3130, 3131, 3132, 3133, 3134, 3135, 3136, 3137, 3138, 3139, 3140, 3141, 3142, 3143, 3144, 3145, 3146, 3147, 3148, 3149, 3150, 3151, 3152, 3153, 3154, 3155, 3156, 3157, 3158, 3159, 3160, 3161, 3162, 3163, 3164, 3165, 3166, 3167, 3168, 3169, 3170, 3171, 3172, 3173, 3174, 3175, 3176, 3177, 3178, 3179, 3180, 3181, 3182, 3183, 3184, 3185, 3186, 3187, 3188, 3189, 3190, 3191, 3192, 3193, 3194, 3195, 3196, 3197, 3198, 3199, 3200, 3201, 3202, 3203, 3204, 3205, 3206, 3207, 3208, 3209, 3210, 3211, 3212, 3213, 3214, 3215, 3216, 3217, 3218, 3219, 3220, 3221, 3222, 3223, 3224, 3225, 3226, 3227, 3228, 3229, 3230, 3231, 3232, 3233, 3234, 3235, 3236, 3237, 3238, 3239, 3240, 3241, 3242, 3243, 3244, 3245, 3246, 3247, 3248, 3249, 3250, 3251, 3252, 3253, 3254, 3255, 3256, 3257, 3258, 3259, 3260, 3261, 3262, 3263, 3264, 3265, 3266, 3267, 3268, 3269, 3270, 3271, 3272, 3273, 3274, 3275, 3276, 3277, 3278, 3279, 3280, 3281, 3282, 3283, 3284, 3285, 3286, 3287, 3288, 3289, 3290, 3291, 3292, 3293, 3294, 3295, 3296, 3297, 3298, 3299, 3300, 3301, 3302, 3303, 3304, 3305, 3306, 3307, 3308, 3309, 3310, 3311, 3312, 3313, 3314, 3315, 3316, 3317, 3318, 3319, 3320, 3321, 3322, 3323, 3324, 3325, 3326, 3327, 3328, 3329, 3330, 3331, 3332, 3333, 3334, 3335, 3336, 3337, 3338, 3339, 3340, 3341, 3342, 3343, 3344, 3345, 3346, 3347, 3348, 3349, 3350, 3351, 3352, 3353, 3354, 3355, 3356, 3357, 3358, 3359, 3360, 3361, 3362, 3363, 3364, 3365, 3366, 3367, 3368, 3369, 3370, 3371, 3372, 3373, 3374, 3375, 3376, 3377, 3378, 3379, 3380, 3381, 3382, 3383, 3384, 3385, 3386, 3387, 3388, 3389, 3390, 3391, 3392, 3393, 3394, 3395, 3396, 3397, 3398, 3399, 3400, 3401, 3402, 3403, 3404, 3405, 3406, 3407, 3408, 3409, 3410, 3411, 3412, 3413, 3414, 3415, 3416, 3417, 3418, 3419, 3420, 3421, 3422, 3423, 3424, 3425, 3426, 3427, 3428, 3429, 3430, 3431, 3432, 3433, 3434, 3435, 3436, 3437, 3438, 3439, 3440, 3441, 3442, 3443, 3444, 3445, 3446, 3447, 3448, 3449, 3450, 3451, 3452, 3453, 3454, 3455, 3456, 3457, 3458, 3459, 3460, 3461, 3462, 3463, 3464, 3465, 3466, 3467, 3468, 3469, 3470, 3471, 3472, 3473, 3474, 3475, 3476, 3477, 3478, 3479, 3480, 3481, 3482, 3483, 3484, 3485, 3486, 3487, 3488, 3489, 3490, 3491, 3492, 3493, 3494, 3495, 3496, 3497, 3498, 3499, 3500, 3501, 3502, 3503, 3504, 3505, 3506, 3507, 3508, 3509, 3510, 3511, 3512, 3513, 3514, 3515, 3516, 3517, 3518, 3519, 3520, 3521, 3522, 3523, 3524, 3525, 3526, 3527, 3528, 3529, 3530, 3531, 3532, 3533, 3534, 3535, 3536, 3537, 3538, 3539, 3540, 3541, 3542, 3543, 3544, 3545, 3546, 3547, 3548, 3549, 3550, 3551, 3552, 3553, 3554, 3555, 3556, 3557, 3558, 3559, 3560, 3561, 3562, 3563, 3564, 3565, 3566, 3567, 3568, 3569, 3570, 3571, 3572, 3573, 3574, 3575, 3576, 3577, 3578, 3579, 3580, 3581, 3582, 3583, 3584, 3585, 3586, 3587, 3588, 3589, 3590, 3591, 3592, 3593, 3594, 3595, 3596, 3597, 3598, 3599, 3600, 3601, 3602, 3603, 3604, 3605, 3606, 3607, 3608, 3609, 3610, 3611, 3612, 3613, 3614, 3615, 3616, 3617, 3618, 3619, 3620, 3621, 3622, 3623, 3624, 3625, 3626, 3627, 3628, 3629, 3630, 3631, 3632, 3633, 3634, 3635, 3636, 3637, 3638, 3639, 3640, 3641, 3642, 3643, 3644, 3645, 3646, 3647, 3648, 3649, 3650, 3651, 3652, 3653, 3654, 3655, 3656, 3657, 3658, 3659, 3660, 3661, 3662, 3663, 3664, 3665, 3666, 3667, 3668, 3669, 3670, 3671, 3672, 3673, 3674, 3675, 3676, 3677, 3678, 3679, 3680, 3681, 3682, 3683, 3684, 3685, 3686, 3687, 3688, 3689, 3690, 3691, 3692, 3693, 3694, 3695, 3696, 3697, 3698, 3699, 3700, 3701, 3702, 3703, 3704, 3705, 3706, 3707, 3708, 3709, 3710, 3711, 3712, 3713, 3714, 3715, 3716, 3717, 3718, 3719, 3720, 3721, 3722, 3723, 3724, 3725, 3726, 3727, 3728, 3729, 3730, 3731, 3732, 3733, 3734, 3735, 3736, 3737, 3738, 3739, 3740, 3741, 3742, 3743, 3744, 3745, 3746, 3747, 3748, 3749, 3750,



Nevertheless, the petition of the city gained some strong supporters. When the new bishop of Michoacán, Don Antonio de Morales Molino, was contacted regarding the petition, he stated that it appeared to him to be holy and in conformity with the will of his predecessor and that he had nothing to say against it, provided the rights of the cathedral chapter and the rector of San Nicolás were maintained regarding the appointment of the rector of the pueblo and the support of the rector of the college. He would also ask His Majesty and His Holiness to grant the annexation. When the case was sent before the Council of the Indies, the viceroy and oidores of Mexico also sent their pareceres in favor of the annexation. In fact, only the cathedral chapter of Michoacán put up a struggle against the move by the City of Mexico.

The testimony taken at López' request brought to light several interesting facts regarding Santa Fe de México. First of all, it becomes quite evident that very few Indians from outside the pueblo were going there to be cured of their infirmities. Bernaldino de Albornoz stated that he had gone to Santa Fe on November 15, 1572, and had found only three Indians and two Spaniards who had gone there to be cured. On the same day he had seen thirty-eight Indians in the royal hospital. Francisco Ponce, who had once served the sick in Santa Fe for ten months, said that there had been one, two, or three sick people there at a time, and at other times none. Father Diego Cavallero Bazán, who was rector of the hospital at the time and had held the office for four years, declared that during the time he had been rector he had not seen more than ten Indians from outside the pueblo come there to be cured. At







times there had been four to six sick Indians of the pueblo itself there, sometimes less, sometimes more. From others he had heard that the same conditions had prevailed there for many years. He approved of the city's proposed plan of annexation.

In the course of the testimony we also find some interesting information regarding the income of the pueblo. Father Bartolomé de Saldaña, who had at one time been rector of the hospital for three years, said that annual income of the pueblo was more than 3,000 pesos de oro común, which they got from about 800 fanegas of wheat, a herd of goats, a mill and fulling-mill, and workshops for making blankets. Father Bazán said that the annual income was about 4,000 pesos before subtracting the costs. At the time they were supporting their rector and one chaplain.

On November 28, 1572, Licenciado Cristóbal de Badillo, arch-deacon of Michoacán, gave a rather lengthy reply to the petition of the City of Mexico. In brief he contended that Santa Fe de México was fulfilling its purpose by the care of orphans, the poor, and other people in need of help. The income of the pueblo was necessary for the continued good work of the College of San Nicolás. In his opinion the City of Mexico should face up to its own obligation to support the hospital of the city.

In spite of the protests of the cathedral chapter of Michoacán, the case was sent to Spain with pareceres of the viceroy and oidores, advising that the annexation should be made, preserving the rights of the cathedral chapter of Michoacán and the rector of San Nicolás, and







that His Majesty should request the pope to allow this change. When the Council began consideration of the case in mid-1574 the fiscal entered the case to complain against the decision of the audiencia, which had given the patronage of the hospital to the cathedral chapter of Michoacán even though the king had previously accepted it. The attorney for the cathedral chapter requested that the fiscal should not be allowed to pursue this question, since it had already been settled. Regarding the question of annexation, he stated that the will of a testator took on the nature of particular law and that it could not be changed even for something better. The Council gave a decision on July 27, 1574, declaring that the fiscal could pursue the case regarding the patronage but that the annexation was not to be allowed for the present. This decision was reconfirmed on August 31, 1574. There is no evidence that the fiscal took further action in the case.

To draw this section of our work to a close we will turn to a report submitted to His Majesty by Bishop Juan de Medina Rincón, Quiroga's second successor in Michoacán, dated March 4, 1582.<sup>12</sup> The prelate found the patronage of the college and hospitals in a somewhat regrettable condition. Apparently the patronage had come entirely into the hands of the cathedral chapter, since no mention was made of the rector of the college as a patron. The bishop could not understand on what basis the audiencia had awarded the patronage to the chapter. He advised the crown that it should assert its primary patronage and have the chapter

---

<sup>12</sup>Relación que Su Majestad manda se envíe a su real consejo del obispo de Michoacán, Valladolid de Michoacán, 4 de marzo, 1582, AGI, México, leg. 374.







appoint one of its members each year to administer it. As it was, there was no agreement among the canons as to how to carry on the administration and no stability in their decisions. The administration had come to such a bad state that the canons had finally renounced it irrevocably to the bishop. He in turn had appointed one of their number, Canon Alonso Ruiz, to take charge of it, but they were dissatisfied with this and it seemed that in order to avoid lawsuits something else would have to be worked out. He was especially concerned for the college from which great good came for the Church in that region.

The idea of hospitals for the sick had taken a strong hold in Michoacán. The bishop wrote that nearly every pueblo of twenty or thirty houses prided itself on its hospital, which was cared for by the Indian men and women who came in turns to serve in it. He estimated that there must be more than 200 such hospitals in the diocese.

Concerning the hospitals of Santa Fe in particular, he noted that Santa Fe de México had an annual income of 3,500 pesos and with proper care it would have been more than 4,000 pesos. From this they supported a rector and three chaplains, all of whom were appointed by the canons. The rector had charge of the Indians in temporal matters and was their vicar in spiritual matters. One of the chaplains resided in Mexico City and came and went to help the rector in Santa Fe. The other two lived in Michoacán, one of them being the rector of the college, who received a little extra support in this way. The chaplains had an obligation of three Masses each week. The rector as vicar and administrator was paid 250 pesos de minas annually plus his food; the







chaplains were given 100 pesos de minas. Besides this, the hospital helped the college with 150 ducados annually and paid salaries to certain officials of the pueblo itself. The money that was left over was spent in the infirmary or on the poor among them who were in need.

Bishop Quiroga had administered Santa Fe de México as an adjunct of his diocese. The present bishop had an agreement with the archbishop of Mexico that whichever bishop was there administered Santa Fe de México as a thing of his own.

Santa Fe de la Laguna, being farther from Mexico City, did not have the income of its sister institution. The income was uncertain and irregular, since it resulted mainly from their work and industry. They harvested wheat and maize and had some looms. They had one diocesan priest who was in charge of the pueblo and who taught them doctrine. He was appointed by the cathedral chapter and received 150 pesos de minas annually. They paid their 150 ducados annually to the college. They supported an infirmary also and, if they had anything left, they bought ornaments for their church, something to which all the Indians were much attached.







## CHAPTER IX

### CONCLUSIONS

In the preceding pages we have watched something of the formation and realization of a great idea, guided by the determined hand of the man who fathered it. It was an expression of the best European tradition of Christian charity as applied to the care of the sick, the poor, and the unfortunate. The transfer of this tradition to the New World and its expression through the forms of Thomas More's Utopia set the pueblos de Santa Fe apart from other such charitable enterprises. The transfer of other less highly motivated European and Spanish traditions and modes of thought to the New World has been given such unproportionate attention in works on Latin America that we tend to forget that work like that of Vasco de Quiroga expressed the tradition more fully than did the activity of the conquerors. The elderly oidor and bishop, with his love for books and learning and his experience in one of the most cultured courts in Europe, certainly had drunk more deeply of the traditions of Europe and was more capable of giving expression to them than the conquistador, who perhaps had seen little more of Spain and Europe than the pueblo where he grew up.

The kind of documentation that we have been able to use here has in some ways given us a more intimate picture of the founder of the pueblo-hospitals than of the life of the institutions themselves. We







have seen Quiroga coming from Spain, a man already advanced in years, in order to help the Indians in their need. He found many poor and neglected people in need of social organization, instruction, and protection. In seeking a way to take care of them his mind fell upon the imaginary society described by the great English chancellor. His idealistic spirit was stirred by the possibilities he envisioned in a society organized after this model. Although his vision embraced the whole Indian population of the New World, he was willing to begin with only one or two pueblos by way of an experiment. On these pueblos he selflessly spent the greater part of his salary, treating them always as his favored children. We have seen him among his Indians, teaching them and leading them away from their savagery like a loving father. He wished to be father to his brown children also in the life of the spirit. For this reason instruction in the Catholic faith was a work of basic importance in his pueblo-hospitals of Holy Faith. His apostolic spirit led him to work with even the fierce Chichimecs, some of the least civilized Indians with whom the Spaniards had come into contact up to that time. Even these nomadic hunters and gatherers were attracted by the kindness of the elderly oidor and bishop and came to listen to his teaching.

But we have also seen that Quiroga could be a fiercely protective father when he saw that the security of his pueblos was endangered. As a layman he had learned to be an expert jurist; as bishop he found himself again and again called upon to use all the tricks of his legal trade in protection of his favorite project. We have seen him willing







to resist by every means possible a decree of the council and audiencia when he saw that it would endanger the existence of one of his pueblos. Throughout his whole life in New Spain he resisted the slanderous and greedy attacks against his Santa Fe de México by the cabildo of Mexico City. Near the end of his life, when his health was already broken under the weight of his nearly ninety years, he determinedly faced one of the most powerful men of Mexico, the second Marqués del Valle, and once more won a legal victory for Santa Fe de México.

Quiroga's work for his hospitales de Santa Fe shows him in his best light. There are other aspects of his life in which he may appear too litigious, unyielding in points of law and legal right. His relations with his fellow bishops, with the religious orders, and with the secular population of Michoacán might have been happier if he had been more willing to make an occasional compromise. These areas of his life will have to be the subject of further study; for the present we will leave him in that role in which he makes the best impression.

A question that is frequently asked regarding the pueblo-hospitals of Santa Fe is whether or not they were successful. The answer to this question must be approached from several angles. Certainly in the mind of their founder they were successful. When he spoke of them in his will it was with a glow of warm pride as of a man who feels that he has done a good job. We have spoken twice previously of the words of his will in which he described the pueblos of Santa Fe in superlative terms as the best work that could be done for the Indians and the one most fully adapted to their needs. When we read his words to the effect that in







these pueblos he had fulfilled his intention of helping the Indians, the intention for which he had come to the New World, we feel that he was well satisfied with the work that had been done. Judging from what we know of Quiroga's character we would say that he must have considered his work a success from the time that he saw the first large group of Indian neophytes receiving the waters of baptism in his pueblos.

Another angle from which we can approach the question of the success of the pueblos is whether or not the Utopian form of community was a lasting way of life for the pueblos. To this question we can give no definite answer. We have seen that prior to 1535 Quiroga had proposed the Utopian form as a basis for reorganizing native society. In the "Ordenanzas" written during the last ten years of his life, he still showed strong influence of the ideas of Sir Thomas More. But we do not have sufficient information as to the actual day-to-day operation of the pueblos to be able to say how far these norms influenced the actual life of the pueblos. We would like to presume that the bishop's ordinances were enforced faithfully, but we must recognize that it is a fallacy in history to presume facts on the basis of the law. A rather disturbing fact in this regard is that, when Moreno wrote his life of Quiroga (1766), he could find only one incomplete copy of the "Ordenanzas" hidden away in the archive of the cathedral chapter of the diocese of Michoacán. By his time their influence must not have been very great, except by way of a tradition.

Financially the pueblos seem to have had considerable success, especially Santa Fe de México. The 3,000-4,000 pesos which this pueblo



these people he had told him that he had been doing, the Indians, the intention for which he had come to the United States, and that he was well satisfied with the work that had been done. Looking after what we know of Quirós's career after we would say that it must have concerned his work a good deal from the time that he saw the first large group of Indian neophytes receiving the waters of baptism in his mission.

Another angle from which we can approach the question of the success of the mission is whether or not the Utopian form of community was a lasting way of life for the people. To this question we can give no definite answer. We have seen that prior to 1535 Quirós had proposed the Utopian form as a basis for reorganizing native society. In the "Ordenanzas" written during the last ten years of his life, he still showed strong influence of the ideas of the Utopian form. But we do not have sufficient information as to the actual day-to-day operation of the mission to be able to say how far these notions influenced the actual life of the people. We would like to assume that the Utopian organization was carried out faithfully, but we must recognize that it is a fallacy in history to presume facts on the basis of the law. A rather striking fact in this regard is that, when Morúa wrote his life of Quirós (1566), he could find only one manuscript copy of the "Ordenanzas" hidden away in the archive of the cathedral chapter of the diocese of Michoacán. By this time their influence must not have been very great, except in way of a tradition.

Obviously the question seems to have had considerable success, especially since by the Utopian. The 5,000-6,000 people which this mission



was grossing annually at the time of Quiroga's death was undoubtedly the major reason why the City of Mexico kept casting greedy glances in its direction. We have very little information about the financial success of Santa Fe de la Laguna, although from the words of Bishop Medina we can judge that it was paying its own way and fulfilling its obligations.

The population of the pueblos de Santa Fe has been greatly exaggerated. The Augustinian chronicler, Juan de Grijalva, started the trouble in his chronicle of the provinces of his Order in New Spain, and nearly everyone else who has said anything on the population of the pueblos has depended on Fray Juan's statement. He asserted in one place that the population of Santa Fe [de México] was 12,000 vecinos; in another, that <sup>it</sup> was 30,000 persons.<sup>1</sup> From the context it appears that this number had supposedly been reached already at the time when Fray Alonso de Borja came to work there, that is, prior to 1536. Contemporary documents do not support the Augustinian's estimate. When the fiscal of the audiencia was supporting Gonzalo Ruiz' suit in 1557, he asserted that Santa Fe de México was a pueblo of more than 300 vecinos.<sup>2</sup> Since he was trying to show that the pueblo had grown so large that Quiroga should no longer have control of it, he would have tended to exaggerate rather than underestimate the population. At about the same time the Indians of Tzintzuntzan

---

<sup>1</sup>Juan de Grijalva, Crónica de la Orden de N. P. S. Agustín en las provincias de la Nueva España (México, 1927), pp. 54-55.

<sup>2</sup>Quiroga vs. Ruiz.







claimed that Santa Fe de la Laguna had about 800 married men.<sup>3</sup> Most of the Indian witnesses agreed with this number and several gave as their source Don Diego Charángari, a principal of the pueblo, although one gave the number of Indians as 400 and another as only 40. Again this is an instance in which the natural tendency would have been to exaggerate. In 1570, five years after Quiroga's death, the rector of Santa Fe de México, Diego Caballero Bazán, reported that in this pueblo there were 130 vecinos and about 500 people who were obliged to go to confession (i.e., all those over seven years old).<sup>4</sup> Bishop Medina in his report of 1582 said that Quiroga had founded Santa Fe de México with about 120 casados and that it had increased, but by the time of writing they had been reduced to 70 or 80, due to a recent pestilence. In Santa Fe de la Laguna, which Quiroga had founded with 200 Indians, by Medina's time there were about 100 Indians or a few more.<sup>5</sup> Presumably in the latter case as in the former when the bishop spoke of Indios he meant casados, or heads of families.

The pueblos of Santa Fe have continued to exist as pueblos down to the present day. It is difficult to know at what time they ceased to operate according to their original plan. In 1696 Bachiller Don

---

<sup>3</sup>Comisión dada por la Real Audiencia de México el año de 1556 a Silvestre de Solórzano, escribano de esta audiencia para que averiguase los malos tratamientos que se hacían a varios Indios de la provincia de Michoacán, 1556, AGI, Justicia, leg. 278.

<sup>4</sup>Luis García Pimentel, Descripción del arzobispado de México hecha in 1570 y otros documentos (México, 1897), p. 266.

<sup>5</sup>Relación que su Majestad manda se envíe a su real consejo del obispo de Michoacán, Valladolid, 4 de marzo, 1582, AGI, México, leg. 374.







Nicolás Joseph de Soria Villaroel was serving as cura and rector of both pueblos of Santa Fe, and had been appointed to the office by the cathedral chapter of Michoacán. He claimed to have been examined and approved in the Otomí, Mexican, and Tarascan languages. He taught his charges Christian doctrine, heard their confessions, and preached to them in their native languages. He also taught them the ways of civilized life (vida política) and had provided them with a school and teacher to teach them to speak Spanish and also to read and write.<sup>6</sup> Thus he would seem to have complied fairly well with the main provisions of Quiroga's will. We have no information as to how much longer this kind of work continued in the pueblos of Santa Fe. At the time when Moreno wrote his work on Quiroga, the pueblos were apparently still subject to the authority of the cathedral chapter of Michoacán but, except for the fact the pueblos were no longer able to satisfy obligations for Masses that Quiroga had placed on them,<sup>7</sup> he gives us little information about their operation.

In recent years the work of Bishop Quiroga in his pueblos of Santa Fe has been the subject of study and comment in Mexico by men of

---

<sup>6</sup>Testimonio de los recaudos y información de la calidad, méritos, y servicios del Doctor D. Jerónimo de Soria Velásquez, colegial del insigne Colegio Viejo de N. S. de Todos Santos de esta ciudad y abogado de esta Real Audiencia y de la de Guadalajara--y de los del Bachiller D. Nicolás Joseph de Soria Villaroel, presbítero, cura rector de los pueblos de Santa Fe del Río y la Laguna en la Provincia de Michoacán, México, 1596, AGI, Escribanía de Cámara, leg. 207C.

<sup>7</sup>Moreno, p. 132.







the most opposed ideologies, each trying to use it for his own purposes. This is not surprising, since for many years the Communists have tried to uproot the Utopia from the ground of its author's thought and life and to transplant it into the sterile soil of their completely materialistic ideology. Communism as an economy has been associated with many forms of thought over the course of the centuries. We need only call to mind that the first socio-economic experiment of Christianity was the communistic life of the Church of Jerusalem in which, without denying the right to personal property, "they had all things in common" (Acts 4:32). This type of communism has always played a part in the life of the Catholic Church through its religious Orders, whose members own no personal property but do not deny the right of private ownership. The form of communism presented by More in his Utopia was associated with a high level of natural religion, an idealized religious thought which contained nearly all of the elements which the Scholastic theologians considered that the mind of man could attain without Christian revelation. Marxian communism, at the opposite extreme from early Christian and monastic communism, is completely materialistic in its orientation, denying the very existence of the spiritual and the fundamental right of ownership. Thus, the communistic manner of control and use of property has been associated as a form of economic life with the most diverse ideologies. Always the ideology has been considered the matter of basic importance.

Bishop Quiroga's little communistic communities must be placed on the end of the scale with the early Christian community. His purpose







was to renew a state close to that of the early Church, for which he thought the Indian was particularly well-adapted. He found in the Utopia a form of life which suited his purpose, once the naturalistic elements had been replaced by a Catholic way of life. It must be remembered also that the Indians who came to Santa Fe were for the most part the poor and needy, or nomadic groups such as the Chichimecs, who had little by the way of private property. A communal form of landholding was necessary, since many of those who came to the pueblo were not expected to stay permanently.

It is a form of praise when a person's enemies find many things worthy of imitation in his work. Bishop Quiroga certainly would not see a very kindred spirit in Vicente Lombardo Toledano, who suggested improving on the "Ordenanzas" by removing all of the religious elements from them.<sup>8</sup> But Toledano was able to see the value of Quiroga's approach to the education of the Indians, and in this there is some small praise for the bishop's work, even though the bishop considered the matter of the instruction of greater importance than the method. The same may be said of others of the Marxist school of thought who attempt to divert Quiroga's Catholic theistic communism into a precedent for their materialistic communism.

Genaro Estrada, in his introduction to Zavala's La "Utopia" de Tomás Moro en la Nueva España, saw in the discovery of Quiroga's dependence on More a matter of significance for the movement of social

---

<sup>8</sup>Cf. Silvio Zavala, Ideario de Vasco de Quiroga (México, 1941), pp. 61-62, n. 26.







reform in Mexico.<sup>9</sup> This aroused the indignation of Edmundo O'Gorman, who made an admittedly impassioned reply concerned more with Estrada's introduction than with Zavala's work and more with More's thought than with Quiroga's actualization of that thought.<sup>10</sup> If Estrada saw an importance of Quiroga's thought in the time of Mexican reform, the reform certainly might have profited from it. The kind bishop's way of re-making society was not that of violent social upheaval, of inciting the poor against the rich, or of taking property from its owners in order to give it to others. Rather, in a spirit of self-forgetfulness, he gave up nearly everything he possessed in order to establish a place where the poor and sick might be cared for and the ignorant educated to take their place in a civilized form of life. He bought the property with his own money, he attracted the natives there by his kindness, and he provided them with teachers to help them improve their condition. If the Mexicans of Estrada's day had learned from Quiroga this lesson of social reform, their efforts would have seen far greater success.

---

<sup>9</sup>Zavala, La "Utopia" de Tomás Moro en la Nueva España y otros estudios (México, 1937), p. viii.

<sup>10</sup>Justino Fernández y Edmundo O'Gorman, Santo Tomás More y "La Utopía de Tomás Moro en la Nueva España" (México, 1937), pp. 25-37.







## BIBLIOGRAPHY

### Manuscript Materials

A wide range of manuscript materials preserved in Spanish archives and libraries, which were visited by the author during the year 1961, has been utilized in the preparation of this dissertation. These collections included: Archivo General de Indias, Sevilla (AGI); Archivo Histórico Nacional, Madrid (AHN); Biblioteca Nacional; Archivo General de Simancas (AGS); Archivo de la Chancillería Real, Granada; Archivo del Hospital Tavera, Toledo; Archivo Parroquial de Madrigal.

The principal repository of manuscript materials relative to Quiroga's life and activities in the New World is the Archivo General de Indias (AGI). In this collection the author examined appropriate sections of the Patronato, Audiencia de México and Indiferente General series, which contain correspondence, legislation, and consultas of the Council of the Indies for the period of Quiroga's activities in New Spain. These series of the Archivo General de Indias proved disappointing in one important respect--they contain only a small amount of Quiroga's correspondence to King and Council and to other officials of the Spanish government. We know from references in Quiroga's extant correspondence that he wrote a considerable number of letters and reports which were not found. The loss of these items of correspondence is to be regretted since through them we might hope to get a clearer picture of Quiroga's personal feelings and attitudes regarding the questions we have discussed here.



Historical Notes

A wide range of the early history of the United States and its people, from the first discovery of the continent to the present time, has been utilized in the preparation of this book. The material is arranged in chronological order, and is divided into three parts: the first part contains the history of the discovery and early settlement of the continent; the second part contains the history of the growth and development of the United States; and the third part contains the history of the United States from the year 1776 to the present time. The principal events of the history of the United States are given in a concise and clear manner, and are accompanied by a full and complete list of the principal events of the history of the United States. The book is written in a simple and straightforward manner, and is suitable for use by students of history and by the general reader.



The judicial series of the Archivo General de Indias--Justicia and Escribanía de Cámara--contain a great mass of documentation relating to the pueblo-hospitals of Santa Fe and to various other aspects of Quiroga's career as oidor of New Spain and bishop of Michoacán. Often they give a surprising amount of biographical information concerning Quiroga. As a trained lawyer he kept a close watch over the progress of his lawsuits and frequently signed the petitions presented by his attorney. At other times items of biographical importance constitute an essential part of the lawsuits.

Research in the collections in Madrid, Simancas, Granada, Toledo, and Madrigal was directed toward the discovery of data on the family background of Quiroga and his career in Spain before his appointment as a member of the Second Audiencia of Mexico. Concerning these aspects of his life-history little exact information has been available. Although this search brought to light certain interesting new information, summarized in Chapter II, in other respects it did not yield all that might have been hoped, for it still leaves significant gaps in our knowledge of Quiroga's activities prior to 1529-1530. Some of these deficiencies may be filled in by research in other areas of the Spanish archives. The Registro General del Sello, for instance, in the Archivo General de Simancas may well record data concerning Quiroga's services to the crown. Because of the short time which the author could devote to research in the Archive of Simancas no attempt was made to examine in detail this lengthy series. A detailed index of the series is in preparation but does not yet include the years of Quiroga's activities.







The reader will find the citations to specific documents or documentary series in the footnotes of the various chapters. To facilitate citation of data in lengthy expedientes, such as the residencia of the Second Audiencia of Mexico and various lawsuits in which Quiroga was involved, abbreviated titles are used in the notes. The key to these and other abbreviations is found on pp. iv-v.

#### Published Materials

- Actas de cabildo de la ciudad de México. 50 vols. México, 1889-1916.
- Aguayo Spencer, Rafael (ed.). Don Vasco de Quiroga: documentos. México, 1939.
- Bataillon, Marcel. "Vasco de Quiroga et Bartolomé de las Casas," Revista de Historia de América, No. 33 (June, 1952), pp. 83-95.
- Beaumont, Pablo, O. F. M. Crónica de Michoacán. 3 vols. México, 1932.
- Bravo Ugarte, José. Historia de México. 3 vols. Vol. II: La Nueva España. 3rd ed. rev. México, 1953.
- Burrus, Ernest J. (trans. and ed.). "Cristóbal Cabrera on the Missionary Methods of Vasco de Quiroga," Manuscripta, V (1961), 17-27.
- Callens, Paul L. Tata Vasco, a Great Reformer of the 16th Century. México, 1959.
- Cartas de Indias. Madrid, 1877.
- Colección de documentos inéditos relativos al descubrimiento, conquista, y organización de las antiguas posesiones españolas de América y Oceanía. 42 vols. Madrid, 1864-1884.
- Colección de documentos inéditos relativos al descubrimiento, conquista y organización de las antiguas posesiones españolas de Ultramar. 25 vols. Madrid, 1885-1928.
- Fernández, Justino, and Edmundo O'Gorman. Santo Tomás More y "La Utopía de Tomás Moro en la Nueva España." México, 1937.
- Foronda y Aguilera, Manuel de. Estancias y viajes del Emperador Carlos V desde el día de su nacimiento hasta el de su muerte. Madrid, 1914.
- Gándara, Felipe de la. Nobiliario, armas, y triunfos de Galicia, hechos







heróicos de sus hijos, y elogios de su nobleza y de la mayor de España y Europa. Madrid, 1677.

García Carraffa, Arturo y Alberto. Diccionario heráldico y geneológico de apellidos españoles y americanos. Madrid, vol. 1-, 1919-.

García Pimentel, Luis (ed.). Descripción del arzobispado de México hecha en 1570 y otros documentos. México, 1897.

Grijalva, Juan de, O. S. A. Crónica de la Orden de N. P. S. Agustín en las provincias de la Nueva España. México, 1927.

Haring, Clarence H. The Spanish Empire in America. New York, 1947.

Icazbalceta, Joaquín García. Don Fray Juan de Zumárraga. Edited by Rafael Aguayo Spencer and Antonio Castro Leal. 4 vols. México, 1947.

Jarnés, Benjamín. Don Vasco de Quiroga, obispo de Utopia. México, 1942.

Lacas, M. M. "A Social Welfare Organizer in Sixteenth-Century New Spain: Don Vasco de Quiroga, First Bishop of Michoacán," The Americas, XIV (1957-58), 57-86.

León, Nicolás. El Libro de Doctrina Christiana. México, 1928.

\_\_\_\_\_. El Ylmo. Señor Don Vasco de Quiroga, primer obispo de Michoacán. México, 1903.

\_\_\_\_\_, and José Miguel Quintana (eds.). Documentos inéditos referentes al Ilustrísimo Señor Don Vasco de Quiroga. México, 1940.

Lietz, Paul S. "Vasco de Quiroga: Oidor Made Bishop," Mid-America, XXXII (1950), 13-32.

\_\_\_\_\_. "Vasco de Quiroga, Sociologist of New Spain," Mid-America, XVIII (1936), 247-259.

Livermore, Harold. A History of Spain. London, 1958.

Marín, Tomás. "La biblioteca del obispo Juan Bernal Díaz de Luco (1495-1556)," Hispania Sacra, V (1952), 263-326.

Méndez Arceo, Sergio. "Contribución a la historia de Don Vasco de Quiroga," Abside, V (1941), 59-68, 196-208.

\_\_\_\_\_. "Dos libros sobre Don Vasco de Quiroga," Abside, I, no. 11 (November, 1940), pp. 62-64.

More, Thomas. De Optimo Reip. Statu deque Nova Insula Utopia. Basilea, 1518.







- \_\_\_\_\_. Utopia, trans. Raphe Robynson, ed. J. Rawson Lumby. Cambridge, England, 1940.
- Paso y Troncoso, Francisco del (comp.). Epistolario de Nueva España. 16 vols. México, 1939-42.
- Puga, Vasco de (comp.). Provisiones, cédulas, instrucciones de su Majestad. 2 vols. México, 1878.
- Quiroga Fajardo, Francisca de. Memorial genealógico del claro vetustísimo origen del apellido de Quiroga y su descendencia solariega ilustre. No place or date given.
- Scholes, France V., and Eleanor B. Adams. Proceso contra Tzintzicha Tangaxoan, el Caltzontzin, formado por Nuño de Guzmán, año de 1530. México, 1952.
- Villaseñor, Raúl. "Luciano, Moro, y el utopismo de Vasco de Quiroga," Cuadernos Americanos, vol. 68 (marzo-abril, 1953), pp. 155-173.
- Warren, Fintan. "The Conquest of Michoacán." Unpublished Master's thesis. University of New Mexico, 1960.
- Zavala, Silvio Arturo. Ideario de Vasco de Quiroga. México, 1941.
- \_\_\_\_\_. Sir Thomas More in New Spain. A Utopian Adventure of the Renaissance. London, 1955.
- \_\_\_\_\_. La "Utopia" de Tomás Moro en la Nueva España y otros estudios. México, 1937.



















